AMELIA.

BY

HENRY FIELDING.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

EMBELLISHED WITH ENGRAVINGS.

VOL. II.

FELICES TER ET AMPLIUS, QUOS IRRUPTA TENET COPULA.

Γυναικός εδέν χρημ' ἀνηρ ληίζεται Έσθλης αμεινον, εδέ βίγιον κακής.



LONDON:

PRINTED FOR C. COOKE, No. 17.
FATER-NOSTER-ROW.

ŀ

Fa:i

u a h

votviali

tfnft

AMELIA.

BOOK V.

CHAP. I.

In which the Reader will meet with an old Acquaintance. BOOTH's affairs were putting on a better aspect than they had ever worn before, and he was willing to make use of the opportunity of one day in seven to taste the fresh air.

At nine in the morning he went to pay a visit to his old friend Colonel James, resolving, if possible, to have a full explanation of that behaviour which appeared to him so mysterious; but the colonel was as inaccessible as the best defended fortress: and it was as impossible for Booth to pass beyond his entry, as the Spaniards found it to take Gibraltar. He received the usual answers: first, that the colonel was not stirring; and, an hour after, that he was gone out. All that he got by aiking farther questions, was only to receive still ruder and ruder answers; by which, if he had been very fagacious, he might have been fatisfied how little worth his while it was to defire to go in: for the porter at a great man's door is a kind of thermometer, by which you may discover the warmth or coldness of his master's friendship. Nay, in the highest stations of all, as the great man himself hath his different kinds of falutation, from an hearty embrace with a kiss, and 'My dear lord,' or 'Dear Sir Charles,' down to, 'Well, Mr. ----, what would you have me do?' fo the porter to some bows with respect, to others with a fmile, to some he bows more, to others less low, to others not at all. Some he just lets in, and others he just shuts out. And in all this they so well correspond, that one would be inclined to think that the great man and his porter had compared their lifts together, and,

like two actors concerned to act different parts in the fame scene, had rehearfed their parts privately together,

before they ventured to perform in public.

Though Booth did not, perhaps, fee the whole matter in this just light, for that in reality it is, yet he was discerning enough to conclude from the behaviour of the servant, especially when he considered that of the master likewise, that he had entirely lost the friendship of James; and this conviction gave him a concern, that not only the flattering prospect of his lordship's favour was not able to compensate, but which even obliterated, and made him for a while forget the situation in which he had left his Amelia; and he wandered about almost two hours, scarce knowing where he went, till at last he dropped into a coffee-house near St. James's, where he sat himself down.

He had scarce drank his dish of coffee, before he heard a young officer of the Guards cry to another, Od, d---n me, Jack, here he comes---here's old homour and dignity, faith! Upon which he saw a chair open, and out issued a most erect and stately sigure indeed, with a vast perriwig on his head, and a vast hat under his arm. This august personage, having entered the room, walked directly up to the upper end, where having paid his respects to all present, of any note, to each according to seniority, he at last cast his eyes on Booth, and very civilly, though somewhat coolly, asked

him how he did.

Booth, who had long recogn zed the features of his old acquaintance Major Bath, returned the compliment with a very low bow; but did not venture to make the first advance in familiarity, as he was truly possessed of that quality which the Greeks considered in the highest light of honour, and which we term modesty; though, indeed, neither ours nor the Latin language hath any word adequate to the idea of the original.

The colonel, after having discharged himself of two or three articles of news, and made his comments upon them, when the next chair to him became vacant, called

Booth

Bo

re of

th

n

21

fe

6

6

f

ś

He then asked him several questions Booth to fill it. relating to his affairs; and when he heard he was out of the army, advised him earnestly to use all means to get in again; faying, that he was a pretty lad, and they must not lose him.

Booth told him in a whisper, that he had a great deal to fay to him on that subject, if they were in a more private place; upon this the colonel proposed a walk in the Park, which the other readily accepted.

During their walk, Booth opened his heart; and, among other matters, acquainted Colonel Bath, that he feared he had loft the friendship of Colonel James; 'Though I am not,' faid he, ' conscious of having

1 the

ther,

atter

was

ir of

the

thip

that

our

ite-

n in

out

till \$'8,

he

ier,

ho-

v a

ure hat

red

ere

to

on ced

his

ent

he

ot eft

h,

ny

00

n

t.

' done the least thing to deserve it.'
Bath answered, 'You are certainly mistaken, Mr. Booth. I have, indeed, scarce seen my brother since ' my coming to town; for I have been here but two 'days: however, I am convinced he is a man of too ' nice honour to do any thing inconsistent with the true ' dignity of a gentleman.' Booth answered, he was far from accusing him of any thing dishonourable. 'me,' faid Bath, ' if there is a man alive can or dare ' accuse him: if you have the least reason to take any thing ill, why don't you go to him? You are a gentleman; and his rank doth not protect him from giv-' ing you satisfaction.'--- 'The affair is not of any such 'kind,' fays Booth; 'I have great obligations to the colonel, and have more reason to lament than com-' plain; and if I could but see him, I am convinced I ' should have no cause for either; but I cannot get ' within his house: it was but an hour ago, a servant of his turned me rudely from the door.'--- Did a ' fervant of my brother use you rudely?' said the colonel with the utmost gravity. ' I do not know, Sir, in ' what light you see such things; but to me the af. front of a servant is the affront of the master; 'and if he doth not immediately punish it, by all the dignity of a man, I would fee the mafter's ' nose between my fingers!' Booth offered to explain,

but to no purpose; the colonel was got into his stilts, and it was impossible to take him down; nay, it was as much as Booth could possibly do to part with him without an actual quarrel; nor would he, perhaps, have been able to have accomplished it, had not the colonel by accident turned at last to take Booth's side of the question: and before they separated, he swore many oaths that James should give him proper satisfaction.

Such was the end of this present interview; so little to the content of Booth, that he was heartily concerned he had ever mentioned a syllable of the matter to his ho-

nourable friend.

CHAP. II.

In which Botth pays a wifit to the noble Lord.

WHEN that day of the week returned, in which
Mr. Booth chose to walk abroad, he went to wait

on the noble peer according to his kind invitation.

Booth now found a very different reception with this great man's porter, from what he had met with at his friend the colonel's. He no fooner told his name, than the porter with a bow told him his lordship was at home; the door immediately flew wide open; and he was conducted to an anti-chamber, where a fervant told him he would acquaint his lordship with his arrival. Nor did he wait many minutes before the same fervant returned, and ushered him to his lordship's apartment.

He found my lord alone, and was received by him in the most courteous manner imaginable. After the first ceremonials were over, his lordship began in the following words: 'Mr. Booth, I do assure you, you are very much obliged to my cousin Ellison. She hath given you such a character, that I shall have a

pleasure of doing any thing in my power to serve you.
But it will be very difficult, I am afraid, to get you
a rank at home. In the West Indies, perhaps, or in
some regiment abroad, it may be more easy: and

when I consider your reputation as a soldier, I make no doubt of your readiness to go to any place where

the

6 th

anf

and

ten

6 t

6 il

· a

' y

e f

6 d

6 T

6 O

(a

6 0

6 y

" t

6 1

lov

his

fter

W

ed

bli

me

on

his

fre

ex

at

ha

to

ts.

as

im

os,

0-

he

ny

tle

ed

0-

h

it

is

is

n

at

ie

ıt

-

e

S

e

e

the fervice of your country shall call you.' Booth answered, that he was highly obliged to his lordship, and affured him, he would with great chearfulness attend his duty in any part of the world. 'The only ' thing grievous in the exchange of countries,' faid he, ' in my opinion, is to leave those I love behind me; ' and I am fure I shall never have a second trial equal 'to my first. It was very hard, my lord, to leave a 'young wife big with her first child, and so affected with my absence, that I had the utmost reason to de-' fpair of ever feeing her more. After fuch a demon-' firation of my resolution to sacrifice every other consideration to my duty, I hope your lordship will ho-' nour me with some confidence, that I shall make no ' objection to serve in any country.' --- 'My dear Mr. Booth,' answered the lord, 'you speak like a soldier; ' and I greatly honour your fentiments. Indeed, I 'own the justice of your inference from the example 'you have given: for to quit a wife, as you fay, in the very infancy of marriage, is, I acknowledge, ' fome trial of resolution.' Booth answered with a low bow, and then after some immaterial conversation, his lordship promised to speak immediately to the minifter, and appointed Mr. Booth to come to him on Wednesday morning, that he might be made acquainted with his patron's fuccefs. The poor man now blushed and looked filly, till, after some time, he fummoned up all his courage to his affiftance, and relying on the other's friendship, he opened the whole affair of his circumstances, and confessed he did not dare to stir from his lodgings above one day in feven. His lordship expressed great concern at this account, and very kindly promifed to take fome opportunity of calling on him at his coufin Ellison's; when he hoped, he faid, to bring him comfortable tidings.

Booth foon afterwards took his leave with the most profuse acknowledgements for so much goodness, and hastened home to acquaint his Amelia with what had so so greatly overjoyed him. She highly congratulated him on having found so generous and powerful a friend, to wards whom both their bosoms burnt with the warmest sentiments of gratitude. She was not however contented, till she had made Booth renew his promise, in the most solemn manner, of taking her with him; after which they sat down with their little children to a scrag of mutton and broth, with the highest satisfaction, and very heartily drank his lordship's health in a pot of

1

porter.

In the afternoon this happy couple, if the reader will allow me to call poor people happy, drank tea with Mrs. Ellison, where his lordship's praises being again repeated by both the husband and wife, were very loudly echoed by Mrs. Ellison. While they were here, the young lady whom we have mentioned at the end of the last book to have made a fourth at whist, and with whom Amelia seemed so much pleased, came in; she was just returned to town from a short visit in the country, and her present visit was unexpected. It was, however, very agreeable to Amelia, who liked her still better on a second interview, and was resolved to solicit her farther acquaintance.

Mrs. Bennet still maintained some little reserve, but was much more familiar and communicative than before. She appeared moreover to be as little ceremonious as Mrs. Ellison had reported her, and very readily accepted Amelia's apology for not paying her the first visit, and agreed to drink tea with her the very next

afternoon.

Whilst the above mentioned company were sitting in Mrs. Ellison's parlour, Serjeant Atkinson passed by the window, and knocked at the door. Mrs. Ellison no sooner saw him, than she said, 'Pray, Mr. Booth, who is that genteel young serjeant? He was here every day last week to enquire after you.' This was indeed a fact; the serjeant was apprehensive of the design of Murphy; but as the poor sellow had received all his answers from the maid or Mrs. Ellison, Booth had never heard a word of the matter. He was however greatly

greatly pleased with what he was now told, and burst forth into great praises of the serjeant, which were seconded by Amelia; who added, that he was her foster-brother, and she believed one of the honestest fellows in the world.

And I'll fwear, cries Mrs. Ellison, he is one of the prettieft.---Do, Mr. Booth, desire him to walk in. A serjeant of the guards is a gentleman; and I had rather give such a man as you describe a dish

of tea, than any beau fribble of them all.'

to.

mest

entthe

fter

rag

and

will

Irs.

at-

the

the

ith

The

ın-

as,

till

cit

ut

e-

us 1C-

rft

TX

in

by

h,

ry

n-

1

ad

er

Booth wanted no great folicitation to shew any kind of regard to Atkinion; and accordingly, the ferjeant was ushered in, though not without some reluctance There is, perhaps, nothing more uneafy than those fensations which the French call the mauvaise bonte, nor any more difficult to conquer; and poor Atkinfon would, I am perfuaded, have mounted a breach with lefs concern, than he shewed in walking across a room before three ladies, two of whom were his avowed well-wishers. Though I do not entirely agree with the late learned Mr. Effex, the celebrated dancing matter's opinion, that dancing is the rudiment of polite education, as he would, I apprehend, exclude every other art and science; yet it is certain, that persons whose feet have never been under the hands of the professors of that art are apt to discover this want in their education in every motion, nay, even when they stand or fit still. feem, indeed, to be overburdened with limbs, which they know not how to use; as if when nature had finished her work, the dancing-mafter still is necessary to put it in motion.

Atkinson was at present an example of this observation, which doth so much honour to a profession for which I have a very high regard. He was handsome, and exquisitely well made; and yet, as he had never learnt to dance, he made so aukward an appearance in Mrs. Ellison's parlour, that the good lady hersels, who had invited him in, could at first scarce refrain from laughter at his behaviour.

Vol. II. 39.

6

6

6

6

6

He had not, however, been long in the room, before admiration of his person got the better of such risible ideas. So great is the advantage of beauty in men, as well as women, and so sure is this quality in either sex of procuring some regard from the beholder!

The exceeding courteous behaviour of Mrs. Ellifon, joined to that of Amelia and Booth, at length diffipated the uneafiness of Atkinson; and he gained sufficient confidence to tell the company some entertaining stories of accidents that had happened in the army within his knowledge; which, though they greatly pleased all present, are not, however, of consequence enough to have

a place in this history.

Mrs. Ellison was so very importunate with her company to stay supper, that they all consented. As for the serjeant, he seemed to be none of the least welcome guests. She was, indeed, so pleased with what she had heard of him, and what she saw of him, that when a little warmed with wine, for she was no slincher at the bottle, she began to indulge some freedoms in her discourse towards him, that a little offended Amelia's delicacy; nay, they did not seem to be highly relished by the other lady; though I am far from infinuating that these exceeded the bounds of decorum, or were, indeed, greater liberties than ladies of the middle age, and especially widows, do frequently allow to themselves.

Relating principally to the Affairs of Serjeant Atkinson.

THE next day, when all the same company, Atkinfon only excepted, assembled in Amelia's apartment, Mrs. Ellison presently began to discourse of him, and that in terms not only of approbation, but even of affection. She called him her clever serjeant, and her dear serjeant; repeated often that he was the prettiest fellow in the army; and said it was a thousand pities he had not a commission; for that, if he had, she was sure he would become a general.

I am of your opinion, Madam, answered Booth;

and he hath got one hundred pounds of his own 'already: if he could find a wife now to help him to two or three hundred more, I think he might eafily get a commission in a marching regiment; for I am convinced there is no colonel in the army would refuse 6 him.

Refuse him, indeed!' fays Mrs. Ellison! 'no: he would be a very pretty colonel that did. And upon my honour, I believe there are very few ladies who would refuse him, if he had but a proper opportunity of foliciting them. The colonel and the lady both would be better off, than with one of those pretty mafters that I fee walking about, and dragging their long fwords after them, when they should rather drag " their leading ftrings."

'Well faid,' cries Booth, 'and spoken like a woman of spirit! Indeed, I believe they would be both better

ferved.

be.

ri-

in

ity

.9C

m,

ed

ent

es

115

e. ve

1-

01

10

18

n at

.

10

6

'True, captain,' answered Mrs. Ellison; I would rather leave the two first syllables out of the word

' gentleman, than the laft.'

'Nay, I affure you,' replied Booth, there is not a quieter creature in the world. Though the fellow hath the bravery of a lion, he hath the meekness of a 'lamb. I can tell you stories enow of that kind, and

fo can my dear Amelia, when he was a boy.

'O, if the match sticks there,' cries Amelia, 'I positively will not spoil his fortune by my silence. I can answer for him from his infancy, that he was one of the best-natured lads in the world. I will tell you 'a story or two of him, the truth of which I can testify When he was but fix from my own knowledge. 'years old, he was at play with me at my mother's house, and a great pointing-dog bit him through the The poor lad, in the midst of the anguish of his wound, declared he was overjoyed it had not happened to Miss (for the same dog had just before snapped at me, and my petticoats had been my defence.) Another instance of his goodness, which greatly re-B 2 commended

commended him to my father, and which I have · loved him for ever fince, was this: my father was a great lover of birds, and strictly forbade the spoiling of their nefts. Poor Joe was one day caught upon a tree, and being concluded guilty, was feverely lashed for it; but it was afterwards discovered that another boy, a friend of Joe's, had robbed the nest of it's ' young ones, and poor Joe had climbed the tree in order to restore them; notwithstanding which, he · fubmitted to the punishment, rather than he would 'impeach his companion. But if these stories appear childish and triffing, the duty and kindness he hath hewn to his mother must recommend him to every one. Ever fince he hath been fifteen years old, he hath more than half supported her; and when my brother died, I remember particularly, Joe (at his defire, for he was much his favourite) had one of his fuits given him; but instead of his becoming finer on that occasion, another young fellow came to church in my brother's cloaths, and my old nurse appeared the fame Sunday in a new gown, which her fon had purchaied for her with the fale of his legacy.'

Well, I protest, he is a very worthy creature!'

faid Mrs. Bennet.

'He is a charming fellow!' cries Mrs. Ellison.
'But then the name of serjeant, Captain Booth, there,
'as the play says, my pride brings me off again.

And whatfoever the fages charge on pride,

The angels fall, and twenty other good faults beside;

On earth I'm fure --- I'm fure --- fomething --- calling

' Pride saves man, and our sex too, from falling.'

Here a footman's rap at the door shook the room; upon which Mrs. Elliton, running to the window, cried out, 'Let me die, if it is not my lord! What 'shall I do? I must be at home to him; but suppose he should enquire for you, captain, what shall I say? 'or will you go down with me?'

The company were in some consusion at this instant; and before they had agreed on any thing, Booth's little girl came running into the room, and said, there was a prodigious great gentleman coming up stairs. She was immediately followed by his lordship; who, as he knew Booth must be at home, made very little or no enquiry at the door.

Amelia was taken somewhat at a surprize; but she was too polite to shew much confusion: for though she knew nothing of the town, she had had a genteel education, and kept the best company the country afforded. The ceremonics therefore passed as usual, and they all

fat down.

lave

as a

ing

n a

hed

her

it's

in

he

ild

ear

th

Ty

he

ny

is

IIS

on

in

ne

-

,

His lordship soon addressed himself to Booth, saying, As I have what I think good news for you, Sir, I could not delay giving myself the pleasure of communicating it to you. I have mentioned your affair where I promised you, and I have no doubt of my success. One may easily perceive, you know, from the manner of people's behaving upon such occasions; and, indeed, when I related your case, I found there was much inclination to serve you. Great men, Mr. Booth, must do things in their own time; but I think you may depend on having something done very soon.

Booth made many acknowledgments for his lordfhip's goodness, and now a second time paid all the thanks which would have been due even had the favour been obtained. This art of promising is the ecconomy of a great man's pride; a fort of good husbandry in conferring favours, by which they receive ten-fold in acknowledgments for every obligation; I mean, among those who really intend the service; for there are others who cheat poor men of their thanks, without ever de-

figning to deferve them all.

This matter being sufficiently discussed, the converfation took a gayer turn; and my lord began to entertain the ladies with some of that elegant discourse, B; which, which, though most delightful to hear, it is impossible

ps

ot

m

re

in

W

fh

e

6

1

should ever be read.

His lordship was so highly pleased with Amelia, that he could not help being somewhat particular to her; but this particularity distinguished itself only in a higher degree of respect, and was so very polite, and so very distant, that she herself was pleased; and at his departure, which was not till he had far exceeded the length of a common visit, declared he was the finest gentleman she had ever seen; with which sentiment her husband and Mrs. Ellison both entirely concurred.

Mrs. Bennet, on the contrary, expressed some little dislike to my lord's complaisance, which she called excessive. 'For my own part,' said she, 'I have not the least relish for those very fine gentlemen. What

- the world generally calls politeness, I term infincerity;
 and I am more charmed with the stories which Mrs.
- Booth told us of the honest serjeant, than with all that the finest gentlemen in the world ever said in

" their lives."

- O to be fure, cries Mrs. Ellison; All for love, or the world well lost, is a motto very proper for some folks to wear in their coat of arms; but the gene-
- rality of the world will, I believe, agree with that
- · lady's opinion of my cousin, rather than with Mrs. · Bennet.'

Mrs. Bennet feeing Mrs. Ellifon took offence at what she faid, thought proper to make some apology, which was very readily accepted, and so ended the visit.

We cannot, however, put an end to the chapter, without observing that such is the ambitious temper of beauty, that it may always apply to itself that celebrated passage in Lucan---

Nec quenquam jam ferre potest Casarve priorem,

Pompeiusve parem .----

Indeed, I believe it may be laid down as a general rule, that no woman who hath any great pretentions to admiration is ever well pleafed in a company where the perceives ble

ia,

to

nd

at

eft

nt

d.

tle

ed

ot

at

y;

s.

in

010

ne

6-

S.

r,

Ì

1

0

perceives herself to fill only the second place. This observation, however, I humbly submit to the judgment of the ladies, and hope it will be considered as retracted by me, if they shall distent from my opinion.

CHAP. IV.

Containing Matters that require no Preface.

WHEN Booth and his wife were left alone together, they both extremely exulted in their good fortune, in having found so good a friend as his lordship; nor were they wanting in very warm expressions of their gratitude towards Mrs. Ellison; after which they began to lay down schemes of living when Booth should have his commission of captain; and, after the exactest computation, concluded that, with economy, they should be able to save, at least, fifty pounds a year out of their income, in order to pay their debts.

These matters being well settled, Amelia asked Booth what he thought of Mrs. Bennet. 'I think, 'my dear,' answered Booth, 'that she hath been 'formerly a very pretty woman.'--- I am miltaken,' replied the, 'if the be not a very good creature. 'don't know I ever took fuch a liking to any one on fo 'short acquaintance. I fancy she hath been a very 'fprightly woman: for, if you observe, she discovers by starts a great vivacity in her countenance."---'I made the same observation,' cries Booth: 'sure 'fome strange misfortune hath befallen her.'--- A 'misfortune indeed!' answered Amelia. 'Sure, child, 'you forgot what Mrs. Ellison told us, that she had 'lost a beloved husband; a misfortune which I had often wondered at any woman's furviving.' At which words she cast a tender look at Booth; and prefently afterwards throwing herfelf upon his neck, cried, 'O heavens! what a happy creature am I! When I confider the dangers you have gone through, how I exult in my blifs! The good-natured reader will suppose that Booth was not deficient in returning such tenderness; after which the convertation became too fond to be here related.

The next morning Mrs. Ellison addressed herself to Booth as follows. 'I shall make no apology, Sir, for what I am going to fay, as it proceeds from my friendship to yourself, and your dear lady. I am convinced, then, Sir, there is fomething more than accident in your going abroad only one day in the week. Now, Sir, if, as I am afraid, matters are 'not altogether as well as I wish them, I beg, fince 'I do not believe you are provided with a lawyer, that 'you will fuffer me to recommend one to you. The ' person I shall mention, is, I assure you, of much ability in his profession, and I have known him do ' great services to gentlemen under a cloud. Do not be athamed of your circumstances, my dear friend: they are a much greater scandal to those who have · left so much merit unprovided for.'

Booth gave Mrs. Ellifon abundance of thanks for her kindness, and explicitly confessed to her that her conjectures were right, and without hesitation accepted

the offer of her friend's affiftance.

Mrs. Ellifon then acquaint d him with her apprehensions on this account. She said, she had both yesterday and this morning feen two or three very ugly fuipicious fellows pass several times by her window. 'Upon all accounts,' faid she, 'my dear Sir, I advise you to keep yourfelf close confined till the lawyer hath been with you. I am fure he will get you your liberty, at least of walking about within the verge. There's fomething to be done with the board of green cloth, I don't know what; but this I know, that feveral gentlemen have lived here a long time very comfortably, and have defied all the vengeance of their creditors. However, in the mean time, you " must be a close prisoner with your lady; and I be-' lieve there is no man in England but would exchange his liberty for the fame gaol.'

She then departed in order to fend for the attorney, and presently afterwards the serjeant arrived with news of the like kind. He said, he had scraped an acquaintance

Murphy.

CI

6

6

6

6

66

6

6

6

.

6

6

6

.

6

6

ft

fa

6

6

6 :

.

60

6

6

6

6

6

.

6

"

of

hi

f to

for

my

am

nan

the

are

hat

The

uch

do

not

nd:

ave

for

her

ted

-910

er-

ui-

W.

vile-

yer

you

the

ard

w,

me

nce

70U

be-

nge-

ind

the.

nce

.

Murphy. 'I hope your honour will pardon me.' cries Atkinson, 'but I pretended to have a small demand upon your honour myself, and offered to employ him in the business; upon which he told me, that if I would go with him to the marshal's court, and make affidavit of my debt, he should be able very 'fhortly to get it me; "For I shall have the captain "in hold," cries he, "within a day or two."--- I 'wish, said the serjeant, 'I could do your honour any fervice. Shall I walk about all day before the door? or shall I be porter, and watch it in the inside, till vour honour can find some means of securing yourself? 'I hope you will not be offended at me, but I beg you would take care of falling into Murphy's hands; for he hath the character of the greatest villain upon earth. I am afraid you will think me too bold, Sir, but I have a little money; if it can be of any fervice, do, ' pray your honour, command it. It can never do me 'fo much good any other way. Confider, Sir, I owe 'all I have to yourfelf and my dear mistress.'

Booth stood a moment as if he had been thunder-struck; and then, the tears bursting from his eyes, he said: 'Upon my soul, Atkinson, you overcome me! I 'scarce ever heard of so much goodness, nor do I know how to express my sentiments of it. But be assured, 'as for your money, I will not accept it; and let it 'satisfy you, that in my present circumstances it would 'do me no essential service; but this be assured of 'likewise, that whilst I live I shall never forget the 'kindness of the offer. However, as I apprehend I 'may be in some danger of sellows getting into the 'house, for a day or two, as I have no guard but 'a poor little girl, I will not refuse the goodness you 'offer to shew in my protection. And I make no 'doubt but Mrs. Ellison will let you sit in her

Atkinson with the utmost readiness undertook the

three days together, from eight in the morning till twelve at night; during which time, he had sometimes the company of Mrs. Ellison, and sometimes of Booth, Amelia, and Mrs. Bennet too; for this last had taken as great a fancy to Amelia, as Amelia had to her; and therefore, as Mr. Booth's affairs were now no secret in the neighbourhood, made her frequent visits during the confinement of her husband, and consequently of her own.

of her own.

Nothing, as I remember, happened in this interval of time, more worthy notice than the following card, which Amelia received from her old acquaintance Mrs. James. 'Mrs. James fends her compliments 'to Mrs. Booth, and defires to know how she does; for as she hath not had the favour of seeing her at her own house, or of meeting her at any public place, in so long a time, fears it may be owing to ill health.'

Amelia had long given over all thoughts of her friend, and doubted not but that she was as entirely given over by her: she was very much surprized at this message, and under some doubt whether it was not meant as an insult, especially from the mention of public places, which she thought so inconsistent with her present circumstances, of which she supposed Mrs. James was well apprized. However, at the entreaty of her husband, who languished for nothing more than to be again reconciled to his friend James, Amelia undertook to pay the lady a visit, and examine into the mystery of this conduct, which appeared to her so unaccountable.

re

6

6

6

6

Mrs. James received her with a degree of civility that amazed Amelia, no lefs than her coldness had done before. She resolved to come to an eclaircinement; and having sat out some company that came in, when they were alone together, Amelia, after some selence and many offers to speak, at last said, 'My dear' Jenny, (if you will now suffer me to call you by so familiar a name) have you entirely forgot a certain 'young'

till

mes

oth,

ken

her;

fe.

ifits

ntly

rval

ard,

nce

ents

es;

at blic

ill

ely

at

not

of ith

rs.

of

to

ın-

he

ın-

ity

ad

e-

n,

fi-

ar

10

in

voung lady who had the pleasure of being your intimate acquaintance at Montpelier?' --- Whom do vou mean, dear Madam?' cries Mrs. James with great concern. 'I mean myself,' answered Amelia. You furprize me, Madam,' replied Mrs. James. · How can you ask me that question!'--- Nay, my dear, I do not intend to offend you,' cries Amelia; but I am really defirous to folve myfelf the reason of that coldness which you shewed me, when you did me the favour of a visit. Can you think, my dear, I was not disappointed, when I expected to meet an 'intimate friend, to receive a cold formal visitant? I defire you to examine your own heart, and answer me honeftly, if you do not think I had some little reason to be diffatisfied with your behaviour?'---' Indeed, Mrs. Booth, answered the other lady, 'you ' furprize me very much: if there was any thing dif-' pleasing to you in my behaviour, I am extremely con-' cerned at it. I did not know I had been defective in 'any of the rules of civility; but if I was, Madam, 'I ask your pardon.'--- Is civility, then, my dear,' replied Amelia, a fynonimous term with friendship? ' Could I have expected, when I parted the last time with 'Miss Jenny Bath, to have met her the next time in the ' shape of a fine lady, complaining of the hardship of ' climbing up two pair of thairs to vifit me, and then ' approaching me with the diftant air of a new or flight 'acquaintance? Do you think, my dear Mrs. James, 'if the tables had been turned, if my fortune had been as high in the world as yours, and you in my diffress and abject condition, that I would not have ' climbed as high as the Monument to visit you?'---'Sure, Madam,' cried Mrs. James, 'I mistake you, or you have greatly mistaken me. Can you com-' plain of my not visiting you, who have owed me a ' vifit almost these three weeks? Nay, did I not even then fend you a card, which fure was doing more than all the friendship and good breeding in the world required? But indeed, as I had met you in no

public place, I really thought you was ill.'.... How can you mention public places to me,' faid Amelia, 'when you can hardly be a stranger to my ' prefent fituation? Did you not know, Madam, that 'I was ruined;'----' No, indeed, Madam, did not I, replied Mrs. James; 'I am fure I should have been highly concerned if I had.' --- Why, fure, my dear, cries Amelia, 'you could not imagine that we were in affluent circumstances, when you found us in such a place, and in such a condition.'--- Nay, my dear,' answered Mrs. James, ' since you are pleased to mention it first yourself, I own, I was a little surprized to fee you in no better lodgings; but I concluded you had your reasons for liking them; and, for my own part, I have laid it down as a positive rule, never to enquire into the private affairs of any one, especially of my friends. I am not of the humour of some ladies, who confine the circle of their acquaintance to one part of the town, and would not be known to vifit in the city for the world. For my part, I never dropped an acquaintance with any one, while it was reputable to keep it up; and I can folemnly declare I have not a friend in the world for whom I have a greater esteem than I have for Mrs. Booth.'

At this instant, the arrival of a new visitant put an end to the discourse, and Amelia soon after took her leave without the least anger, but with some little unavoidable contempt for a lady, in whose opinion, as we have hinted before, outward form and ceremony constituted the whole essence of friendship; who valued all her acquaintance alike, as each individual ferved equally to fill up a place in her visiting roll; and who, in reality, had not the least concern for the good qualities or well-being of any of them.

CHAP. V.

Containing much beroic Matter.

T the end of three days, Mrs. Ellison's friend had so far purchased Mr. Booth's liberty, that he could walk again abroad within the verge, without

any danger of having a warrant backed against him by the board before he had notice. As for the ill-looked persons that had given the alarm, it was now discovered that another unhappy gentleman, and not

Booth, was the object of their purfuit.

faid

my that

ot I,

been

ear,'

e in

cha

ear,'

nen-

ized

you

own

r to

ially

e la-

ce to

o vi-

was

lare

vea

t an

her

una-

, as

VIIO

lued

rved

vho,

ali-

had

he

nout

nye

Mr. Booth being now delivered from his fears, went, as he had formerly done, to take his morning walk in the Park. Here he met Colonel Bath in company with fome other officers, and very civilly paid his respects to him. But instead of returning the falute, the colonel looked him full in the face with a very stern countenance; and, if he could be said to take any notice of him, it was in such a manner as to inform him he would take no notice of him.

Booth was not more hurt than furprized at this behaviour, and refolved to know the reason of it. He therefore watched an emportunity till the colonel was

therefore watched an opportunity till the colonel was alone, and then walked boldly up to him, and defired to know if he had given him any offence. The colonel answered hastily, 'Sir, I am above being offended with 'you; nor do I think it consistent with my dignity to

'make you any answer!' Booth replied, 'I don't

know, Sir, that I have done any thing to deserve this traument.'--- Look'e Sir,' cries the colonel, if

I had not formerly had some respect for you, I should not think you worth my resentment. However, as

not think you worth my refertment. However, as you are a gentleman born, and an officer, and as I

have had an efteem for you, I will give you some marks of it, by putting it in your power to do your-

felfjustice. I will tell you, therefore, Sir, that you

have acted like a scoundrel!'--- If we were not in the Park,' answered Booth warmly, I would thank you

'very properly for that compliment.'---O Sir!' cries the colonel, 'we can be foon in a convenient place.' Upon which Booth answered, he would attend him wherever he pleased. The colonel then bid him come along, and strutted forward directly up Constitution

Hill to Hyde Park, Booth following him at first, and afterwards walking before him, till they came to that Vol. II. 39.

place which may properly be called the Field of Blood, being that part a little to the left of the ring which heroes have chosen for the scene of their exit out of this world.

Booth reached the ring some time before the colonel; for he mended not his pace, any more than a Spaniard. To say truth, I believe it was not in his power; for he had so long accustomed himself to one and the same strut, that as a horse used always to trotting can scarce be forced into a gallop, so could no passion force the colonel to alter his pace.

At length, however, both parties arrived at the lifts, where the colonel very deliberately took off his wig and coat, and laid them on the grafs; and then drawing his fword, advanced to Booth, who had likewise his drawn weapon in his hand, but had made no other pre-

paration for the combat.

The combatants now engaged with great fury, and after two or three paffes, Booth ran the colonel through the body, and threw him on the ground, at the fame

time possessing himself of the colonel's sword.

As foon as the colonel was become master of his speech, he called out to Booth in a very kind voice, and said, 'You have done my business; and satisfied me that you are a man of honour, and that my brother James must have been mistaken: for I am convinced, that no man who will draw his sword in so gallant a

manner is capable of being a rascal. D---n me, give me a bus, my dear boy; I ask your pardon for that infamous appellation I dishonoured your dignity

with; but, d---n me, if it was not purely out of love, and to give you an opportunity of doing yourself jus-

tice, which I own you have done like a man of honour.
What may be the confequence I know not; but I

hope, at least, I shall live to reconcile you with my

brother.'

Booth shewed great concern, and even horror in his countenance. Why, my dear colonel, faid he, would

would you force me to this? For Heaven's fake, tell

" me what I have ever done to offend you?"

od,

ich

his

1;

rd.

he

ut,

ed

to

S,

nd

lis

e-

id

h

1e

is

d

r

,

t

Me!' cried the colonel. 'Indeed, my dear child,
'you never did any thing to offend me. Nay, I have
'acted the part of a friend to you in the whole affair.
'I maintained your cause with my brother as long as
'decency would permit. I could not flatly contradict
him, though, indeed, I scarce believed him. But what
'could I do? If I had not fought with you, I must have
been obliged to have fought with him; however, I
hope what is done will be sufficient, and that matters
may be discommodated without your being put to the
necessity of fighting any more on this occasion.'

'Never regard me,' cried Booth eagerly; ' for heaven's fake, think of your own prefervation. Let me

' put you into a chair, and get you a furgeon.'

'Thou art a noble lad,' cries the colonel, who was now got on his legs, 'and I am glad the business is so 'well over. For though your sword went quite through, it slanted so, that I apprehend there is little danger of life. However, I think there is enough done to put an honourable end to the affair, especially as you was so hasty to disarm me. I bleed a little, but I can walk to the house by the water; and if you will send me a chair thither, I shall be obliged to 'you.'

As the colonel refused any affistance, (indeed he was very able to walk without it, though with somewhat less dignity than usual) Booth set forward to Grosvenor Gate, in order to procure the chair, and soon after returned with one to his friend; whom having conveyed into it, he attended himself on soot into Bond Street,

where then lived a very eminent furgeon.

The furgeon having probed the wound, turned towards Booth, who was apparently the guilty person, and said with a finile, 'Upon my word, Sir, you have 'performed the business with great dexterity.'

' Sir,' cries the colonel to the furgeon, ' I would not have you imagine I am afraid to die. I think I

know more what belongs to the dignity of a man; and, I believe I have shewn it at the head of a line of battle. Do not impute my concern to that fear,

when I ask you whether there is or is not any dan-

" ger?"

Really, colonel,' answered the surgeon, who well knew the complexion of the gentleman then under his hands, 'it would appear like presumption to say, that a man who hath been just run through the body is in no manner of danger. But, this I think, I may affure you, that I yet perceive no very bad symptoms, and unless something worse should appear, or a sever be the consequence, I hope you may live to be again, with all your dignity, at the head of a line of battle.'

'I am glad to hear that is your opinion,' quoth the colonel, 'for I am not defirous of dying, though I am 'not afraid of it. But if any thing worse than you 'apprehend should happen, I defire you will be a witness of my declaration, that this young gentleman is 'entirely innocent. I forced him to do what he did.---

My dear Booth, I am pleased matters are as they are.
You are the first man that ever gained an advantage
over me; but it was very lucky for you that you dis-

armed me, and I doubt not but you have the equanimity to think fo. If the butiness, therefore, hath

's ended without doing any thing to the purpose, it was fortune's pleasure, and neither of our faults.'

Booth heartily embraced the colonel, and affured him of the great fatisfaction he had received from the furgeon's opinion: and foon after the two combatants took their leave of each other. The colonel, after he was dreffed, went in a chair to his lodgings, and Booth walked on foot to his; where he luckily arrived without meeting any of Mr. Murphy's gang; a danger which never once occurred to his imagination till he was out of it.

The affair he had been about had, indeed, so entirely occupied his mind, that it had obliterated every other idea;

idea; among the rest, it caused him so absolutely to forget the time of the day, that though he had exceeded the time of dining above two hours, he had not the least fulpicion of being at home later than usual.

CHAP. VI.

In which the Reader will find Matter worthy his Confideration.

A MELIA having waited above an hour for her hufband, concluded, as he was the most punctual man alive, that he had met with some engagement abroad, and fat down to her meal with her children; which, as it was always uncomfortable in the abience of her husband, was very short; so that, before his return, all the apparatus of dining was entirely removed.

Booth fat some time with his wife, expecting every minute when the little maid would make her appearance; at last, curiosity, I believe, rather than appetite, made him ask, how long it was to dinner. 'To dinner, ' my dear!' answerd Amelia; ' sure you have dined, I hope?' Booth replied in the negative; upon which, his wife started from her chair, and bestirred herself as mimbly to provide him a repast, as the most industrious hostels in the kingdom doth, when some unexpected gueft of extraordinary quality arrives at her house.

The reader hath not, I think, from any passages hitherto recorded in this history, had much reason to accule Amelia of a blameable curiofity; he will not, I hope, conclude that the gave an initiance of any fuch fault, when, upon Booth's having fo long overstayed his time, and fo greatly mistaken the hour of the day, and upon some other circumstances of his behaviour, (for he was too honest to be good at concealing any of his thoughts) she said to him, after he had done eating, " My dear, I am fure fomething more than ordinary hath happened to-day, and I beg you will tell me what " it is."

Booth answered, that nothing of any consequence had happened; that he had been detained by a friend, whom he met accidentally, longer than he expected. In short, he made many shussing and evalive answers; not boldly lying out, which, perhaps, would have succeeded, but poorly and vainly endeavouring to reconcile falsehood with truth; an attempt which seldom fails to

betray the most practifed deceiver.

How impossible was it, therefore, for Booth to succeed in an art for which nature had to entirely disqualified him! His countenance indeed confessed faster than his tongue denied: and the whole of his behaviour gave Amelia an alarm, and made her fulpect fomething very bad had happened; and as her thoughts turned presently on the badness of their circumstances, she feared some mischief from his creditors had betallen him; for the was too ignorant of fuch matters to know, that if he had fallen into the hands of the Philittines, (which is the name given by the faithful to bailiffs) he would hardly have been able fo foon to recover his liberty. Booth at last perceived her to be uneasy? and as he saw no hopes of contriving any fiction to fatisfy her, he thought himself obliged to tell her the truth, or, at least, part of the truth; and confessed that he had had a little skirmish with Colonel Bath, in which, he faid, the colonel had received a flight wound, not at all dangerous: 'And this,' fays he, 'is all the whole " matter.'---- If it be fo,' cries Amelia, ' I thank Heaven no worse hath happened; but why, my dear, will you ever converse with that madman, who can · embrace a friend one moment, and fight with him the " next?'--- Nay, my dear,' answered Booth, 'you yourself must confess, though he be a little too much on the qui vive, he is a man of great honour and good-nature.'--- Tell me not,' replied the, of fuch good-nature and honour as would facrifice a friend, and a whole family, to a ridiculous whim .--- O Hea-' ven!' cried she, falling upon her knees, ' from what mifery have I escaped! from what have these poor babes escaped, through your gracious providence this day!'---- Then turning to her husband, she cried, But are you fure the monster's wound is no more 6 dangerous



y e e e si

vetlete

1

1

e

t, he made many findling and evalve influers; no staylying out, which, perhaps, would have in restriction of with reality endeavouring to reconcile take and with reality an attempt which icklone and to the stayle of the stayle

tray the most practifed decriver. How impossible was it, therefore, for Booth to to Seed having art for which parture back to entirely distant un't his counted are indeed contened falte the regree denied; and the whole of his behaviota Alongs an alarm, and made her fullyeft fornething ned and innered a mid as her thoughts turned paron the bounds of their circumitances, the learn muchief from his creditors had beratten hims was too ignorant of inch mutters to know, that had fully into the names on the Philitenes, to be the prove given by the fatherd to ballites) be sehardly have been able to then to recover his to at Esotis at 1-it perceived his to be uneaty h and at 1-1 ne hope of contribing any helion to falisfy he Lancent Bladen obliged to tell her the truth, a a nittle referming with Colonel Bath, in Warsh field, the volcati had received a flight wound, a all dangerous: " And this, days in, " is all the s married that be lo, one Ament, the Heaven no worle bath happened; but why, mawill you ever converie with that maddler, was · emprace a friend one moments and fight with its t new " " Nay, my dear," salwered Booth, * yourself mult contels, though he be a little too s on the qui wive, he is a man of given house. s godd-resture Tell me not, replied the, to all * good netwer and honour as would facrifice to fre-T and a whole family, to a distinuous wheat on O I f year tarted the, failing over her leners, f from as-· maler have I escaped! from what have their pere bares chaped, through your practicals providence of day have been running to ber humand, fire he · But it you fore the monther's wound is no 's

COOKE'S EDITION OF SELECT NOVELS.



white the street of the street

dangerous than you fay? A monster furely I may call him, who can quarrel with a man that could not,

that I am convinced would not, offend him!'

Upon this question, Booth repeated the assurances which the surgeon had given them, perhaps with a little enlargement, which pretty well satisfied Amelia; and instead of blaming her husband for what he had done, she tenderly embraced him, and again returned

thanks to Heaven for his fafety.

In the evening, Booth infifted on paying a fhort visit to the colonel, highly against the inclination of Amelia; who, by many arguments and entreaties, endeavoured to dissuade her husband from continuing an acquaintance, in which, she said, she should always foresee much danger for the future. However, she was at last prevailed upon to acquiesce; and Booth went to the colonel, whose lodgings happened to be in the verge, as well as his own.

He found the colonel in his night-gown, and in his great chair, engaged with another officer at a game of chefs. He rose immediately; and having heartily embraced Booth, presented him to his friend, saying, he had the honour to introduce to him as brave and as fortitudinous a man as any in the king's dominions. He then took Booth with him into the next room, and defired him not to mention a word of what had happened in the morning: saying, I am very well satisfied that no more hath happened: however, as it ended in noting, I could wish it might remain a secret. Booth told him he was heartily glad to find him so well, and promised never to mention it more to any one.

The game at chefs being but just begun, and neither of the parties having gained any confiderable advantage, they neither of them insisted on continuing it; and now the colonel's antagonist took his leave, and left the co-

lonel and Booth together.

As foon as they were alone, the latter earneftly entreated the former to acquaint him with the real cause of his anger; 'For may I perish,' cries Booth, 'if I can even

even guess what I have ever done to offend either you

.

in

.

6

6

6

.

.

.

.

6

Bo

31

.

6

4

6

6

"

6

6

6

6

.

6

.

.

.

6

fu

di

th

or your brother Colonel James!'
Look'e, child,' cries the colonel, 'I tell you I am

for my own part fatisfied: for I am convinced thata man who will fight can never be a raical? and therefore, why should you enquire any more of me at prefent? When I see my brother James, I hope to reconcile all matters; and, perhaps, no more swords need be drawn on this occasion.' But Booth still perfisting in his defire, the colonel, after some hefitation, with a most tremendous oath, cried out, 'I do not think my. · felf at liberty to refuse you, after the indignity I offered you; fo, fince you demand it of me, I will ' inform you. My brother told me you had used him dishonorably, and had divellicated his character be-' hind his back. He gave me his word, too, that he was well affured of what he faid. What could I have done, though I own to you I did not believe him, and your behaviour fince hath convinced me I was in " the right? I must either have given him the lye, and fought with him, or elfe I was obliged to behave as I 6 did, and fight with you. And now, my lad, I leave

it to you to do as you please; but if you are laid under any necessity to do yourself farther justice, it is your own fault.'
Alas, colonel!' answered Booth, besides the obli-

I love for him, that I think of nothing less than resentment. All I wish, is to have this affair brought to
an eclaircissement, and to satisfy him that he is in an
error: for though his affertions are cruelly injurious,
and I have never deserved them; yet I am convinced
he would not say what he did not himself think.
Some raical, environs of his friendship for me, bath

gations I have to the colonel, I have really so much

Some raical, envious of his friendship for me, hath belyed me to him; and the only resentment I desire,

is to convince him of his mistake.'

At these words, the colonel grinned horribly a ghastly smile, or rather sneer, and answered, 'Young gentlman, 'you may do as you please; but by the eternal dignity

of man, if any man breathing had taken a liberty with my character--here, here.--Mr. Booth,' (thewing his fingers) 'here, d---n me, fhould be his nostrils; 'he should breathe through my hands, and breathe his 'last, d---n me!'

Booth answered, 'I think, colonel, I may appeal to your testimony that I dore do myself justice; since he who dare draw his sword against you, can hardly be supposed to fear any other person; but I repeat to you again that I love Colonel James so well, and am so greatly obliged to him, that it would be almost indifferent to me, whether I directed my sword against

his breaft, or my own.

you

am

lat a

ere-

pre-

con-

need

ting

tha

my-

y I

will

him

be-

t he

d I

ıım,

s in

and

as I

eave

nder

rour

bli-

uch

ent-

t to

an

ous,

aced

nk.

nath

fire,

Ally

nan,

nity

of

The colonel's muscles were confiderably foftened by Booth's last speech; but he again contracted them into avast degree of fierceness, before he cried out, Boy, ' thou halt reason enough to be vain; for thou art the ' first person that ever could proudly say, he gained an 'advantage over me in combat. I believe, indeed, thou art not afraid of any man breathing; and, as I know thou haft some obligations to my brother, I 'do not discommend thee; for nothing more becomes the dignity of a man than gratitude. Besides as I am ' fatisfied my brother can produce the author of the ' flander --- I fay, I am latisfied of that; d --- n me, if 'any man alive dares affert the contrary, for that 'would be to make my brother himself a lyar---- I will ' make him produce his author; and then, my dear boy, your doing yourfelf proper justice there will bring you finely out of the whole affair. As foon as ' my furgeon gives me leave to go abroad, which, I hope, will be in a few days, I will bring my brother Immes to a tavern, where you shall meet us; and I will engage my honour, my whole dignity to you, to make you friends."

This affurance of the colonel gave Booth great pleafure; for few persons ever loved a friend better than he did James: and as for doing military justice on the author of that scandalous report which had incensed his

friend

friend against him, not Bath himself was ever more ready on such an occasion, than Booth, to execute it. He soon after took his leave, and returned home in high spirits to his Amelia, whom he found in Mrs. Ellison's apartment, engaged in a party at ombre with that lady

and her right honourable coufin.

His lordship had, it seems, had a second interview with the great man, and having obtained farther hopes (for I think there was not yet an absolute promise) of success in Mr. Booth's affairs, his usual good-nature brought him immediately to acquaint Mr. Booth with it. As he did not therefore find him at home, and as he met with the two ladies together, he resolved to stay till his friend's return, which he was affured would not be long, especially as he was so lucky, he said, to have

no particular engagement that whole evening.

We remarked before, that his lordship, at the first interview with Amelia, had distinguished her by a more particular address from the other ladies; but that now appeared to be rather owing to his perfect good-breeding, as the was then to be confidered as the mistress of the house, than from any other preference. His prefent behaviour made this still more manifest; for as he was now in Mrs. Ellison's apartment, though she was his relation and old acquaintance, he applied his conversation rather more to her than to Amelia. His eyes, indeed, were now and then guilty of the contrary distinction, but this was only by stealth; for they constantly withdrew the moment they were discovered. In short, he treated Amelia with the greatest distance, and at the fame time with the most profound and awful respect; his conversation was so general, so lively, and fo obliging, that Amelia, when she added to his agreeableness the obligations she had to him for his friendship to Booth, was certainly as much pleased with his lordthip, as any virtuous woman can possibly be with any man besides her own husband.

CHAP.

ea

ce

af

alı

no

th

as

ple

luf

too

har

rat

cor

die

oth

bel

lia,

the

eve

fho

Mr

a

tl

for if

f th

of A

vi

nore

e it.

nigh on's

lady

with

or I

cefs

ight

As

met

his

be

ave

first

ore

WOL

ed-

of

ore.

he

vas

on-

His

ary

on-

ed.

Cd,

ful

ind

ee-

nip

d-

ny

,

Containing various Matters.

WE have already mentioned the good-humour in which Booth returned home; and the reader will eafily believe it was not a little increased by the good-humour in which he found his company. My lord received him with the utmost marks of friendship and affection, and told him that his affairs went on as well almost as he himself could desire, and that he doubted not very soon to wish him joy of a company.

When Booth had made a proper return to all his lordship's unparalleled goodness, he whispered Amelia that the colonel was entirely out of danger, and almost as well as himself. This made her satisfaction compleat, threw her into such spirits, and gave such a lustre to her eyes, that her sace, as Horace says, was too dazzling to be looked at; it was certainly too handsome to be looked at without the highest admiration.

His lordship departed about ten o'clock, and left the company in raptures with him; especially the two ladies, of whom it is difficult to fay which exceeded the other in his commendations. Mrs. Ellison swore she believed he was the best of all human kind; and Amelia, without making any exception, declared he was the finest gentleman, and most agreeable man, she had ever feen in her life; adding it was a great pity he flould remain fingle. 'That's true, indeed,' cries Mrs. Ellison; 'and I have often lamented it; nay, I 'am aftonished at it, confidering the great liking he 'always shews for our fex, and he may certainly have. 'the choice of all. The real reason, I believe, is his 'fondness for his fister's children. I declare, Madam, 'if you was to fee his behaviour to them, you would 'think they were his own. Indeed, he is vaftly fond of all manner of children!'--- Good creature, cries 'Amelia; 'if ever he doth me the honour of another ' vifit, I am refolved I will shew him my little things. 'I think, Mrs. Ellison, as you say my lord loves children, I may fay, without vanity, he will not see many fuch.'---' No, indeed, will he not,' answered Mrs. Ellison; 'and, now I think on't, Madam, I wonder at my own stupidity, in never making the offer before: but fince you put it into my head, if you will give me leave, I'll take master and mis to wait on my lord's nephew and nice. They are work

on my lord's nephew and niece. They are very pretty-behaved children; and little mafter and miss will be, I dare swear, very happy in their acquain-

0

p

C

a

h

f

n

C

t

ſ

t

t

h

p

t

h

f

l

a

6

6

tance: befides, if my lord himself should see them.
I know what will happen, for he is the most generous

of all human beings.

Amelia very readily accepted the favour which Mrs Ellison offered her; but Booth expressed some reluctance.

'Upon my word, my dear,' said he, with a sinde, this behaviour of ours puts me in mind of the common conduct of beggars; who, whenever they receive a favour, are sure to send other objects to the same fountain of charity. Don't we, my dear, repay our obligations to my lord in the same manner,

by fending our children a begging to him?

thought enter your brains!---I protest, Madam, I begin to grow ashamed of this husband of yours.--- How can you have so vulgar a way of thinking? Begging, indeed! The poor dear little things a begging! It my lord was capable of such a thought, tho he was my own brother instead of my cousin, I should scorn him too much ever to enter his doors.'---- O dear Madam,' answered Amelia, 'you take Mr. Booth too seriously, when he was only in jest; and the children shall wait upon you whenever you please.'

Though Booth had been a little more in earnest than Amelia had represented him, and was not, perhaps, quite so much in the wrong as he was considered by Mrs. Ellison; yet, seeing there were two to one against him, he wisely thought proper to recede, and let his smile go off with that air of a jest which his wife had

given it.

fee

ered

, I

ofyou

vait

cry

niis

un-

in,

ous

rs.

ile,

-111

the

I'c-

lur,

ha

, I

ig?

eg-

ho'

, I

18.1

ike

it;

ou

nan

05,

by

nft

his

ad

s.

Mrs. Ellison, however, could not let it pass without paying some compliments to Amelia's understanding, nor without some obscure reflections upon Booth, with whom she was more offended than the matter required. She was indeed, a woman of most profuse generosity, and could not bear a thought which she deemed vulgar or sneaking. She afterwards launched forth the most profuse encomiums on his lordship's liberality, and concluded the evening with some instances which he had given of that virtue, which, if not the noblest, is, perhaps, one of the most useful to society with which great and rich men can be endowed.

The next morning early, Serjeant Atkinson came to wait on Lieutenant Booth, and defired to speak with his honour in private; upon which the lieutenant and serjeant took a walk together in the Park. Booth expected every minute when the ferjeant would open his mouth, under which expectation he continued till he came to the end of the Mall, and fo he might have continued till he came to the end of the world; for though feveral words flood at the end of the ferjeant's lips, there they were likely to remain for ever. He was indeed in the condition of a miler, whom a charitable impulse hath impelled to draw a few pence to the edge of his pocket, where they are altogether as secure as it they were in the bottom: for, as the one hath not the heart to part with a farthing, so neither had the other the heart to speak a word.

Booth at length, wondering that the serjeant did not speak, asked him, what his business was; when the latter, with a stammering voice, began the following apology: 'I hope, Sir, your honour will not be angry, 'nor take any thing amiss of me. I do assure you, it 'was not of my seeking; nay, I dare not proceed in the 'matter without first asking your leave. Indeed, if I had taken any liberties from the goodness you have been pleased to shew me, I should look upon myself as one of the most worthless and despicable of wretches;

but nothing is farther from my thoughts. I know Vol. II. 39. D the

the distance which is between us; and because your honour has been fo kind and good as to treat me

with more familiarity than any other officer ever did, · if I had been base enough to take any freedoms, or

to encroach upon your honour's goodness, I should deserve to be whipt through the regiment. I hope

therefore, Sir, you will not fuspect me of any such

attempt.'

What can all this mean, Atkinson?' cries Booth; what mighty matter would you introduce with all

this previous apology?'

'I am almost ashamed and afraid to mention it,' answered the serjeant, and yet I am fure your honour will believe what I have faid, and not think any thing owing to my own prefumption; and, at the fame time, I have no reason to think you would do any thing to spoil my fortune in an honest way, when it is dropt into my lap without my own feeking. For " may I perish, if it is not all the lady's own goodness! and I hope in Heaven, with your honour's leave, I fhall live to make her amends for it.' In a word, that we may not detain the reader's curiofity quite for long as he did Booth's, he acquainted that gentleman that he had had an offer of marriage from a lady of his acquaintance, to whose company he had introduced him, and defired his permission to accept of it.

Booth must have been very dull indeed, if after what the ferjeant had faid, and after what he had heard Mrs. Ellison fay, he had wanted any other information concerning the lady. He answered him briskly and chearfully, that he had his free confent to marry any woman whatever: 'And the greater and richer fhe is,' added he, 'the more I shall be pleased with the match. don't enquire who the lady is,' faid he, fmiling;

but I hope the will make as good a wife, as I am con-

s vinced her husband will deserve.'

' Your honour hath been always too good to me,' cries Atkinson; 'but this I promise you, I will do all in my power to merit the kindness she is pleased to

6 this

fnew me. I will be bold to fay fne will marry an honeft man, though he is but a poor one; and fne fnall never want any thing which I can give her, or do for her, while my name is Joseph Atkinson.

' And fo her name is a fecret, Joe; is it?' cries

Booth.

our

me

lid,

or

uld

ope

ich

h:

all

t,

ur

ny

he

do

en

or

5!

I

d,

(o

11

S

1,

Why, Sir, answered the ferjeant, 'I hope your honour will not insist upon knowing that, as I think

'it would be dishonourable in me to mention it.'

'Not at all,' replied Booth; 'I am the farthest in 'the world from any such desire. I know thee better 'than to imagine theu wouldst disclose the name of a 'fair lady'.' Booth then shook Atkinson heartily by the hand, and assured him earnestly of the joy he had in his good fortune; for which the good serjeant failed not of making all proper acknowledgements; after which they parted, and Booth returned home.

As Mrs. Ellifon opened the door, Booth hastily rushed by; for he had the utmost difficulty to prevent laughing in her face. He ran directly up stairs, and throwing himself into a chair, discharged such a sit of laughter as greatly surprized, and at first almost frightened, his

wife.

Amelia, it will be supposed, presently enquired into the cause of this phænomenon; with which Booth, as soon as he was able, (for that was not within a few minutes) acquainted her. The news did not affect her in the same manner it had affected her husband; on the contrary, she cried, 'I protest I cannot guess what 'makes you see it in so ridiculous a light. I really think Mrs. Ellison hath chosen very well. I am convinced Joe will make her one of the best of husbands; and, in my opinion, that is the greatest blessing a woman can be possessed.

However, when Mrs. Ellison came into the room a little while afterwards to fetch the children, Amelia became of a more rifible disposition; especially when the former turning to Booth, who was then present, said, So, captain, my jantee serjeant was very early here

this morning. I feolded my maid heartily for letting him wait so long in the entry, like a lacquey, when he might have shewn him into my inner apartment. At which words, Booth burst out into a very loud laugh; and Amelia herself could no more prevent laughing than she could blushing.

"Heyday!' cries Mrs. Ellison; "what have I said to cause all this mirth!" and at the same time blushed, and looked very filly, as is always the case with perfons who suspect themselves to be the objects of laughter, without absolutely taking what it is which makes

them ridiculous.

Booth still continued laughing; but Amelia, composing her muscles, said, 'I ask your pardon, dear Mrs. Ellison, but Mr. Booth hath been in a strange giggling humour all this morning; and I really

think it is infectious.'

' I ask your pardon too, Madam,' cries Booth, ' but

one is fometimes unaccountably foolish.'

'Nay, but seriously,' said she, 'what is the matter?'
Something I said about the serjeant, I believe: but
you may laugh as much as you please; I am not
sathamed of owning, I think him one of the prettiest
fellows I ever saw in my life; and, I own, I scolded
my maid for suffering him to wait in my entry; and

' where is the mighty ridiculous matter, pray?'
' None at all,' answered Booth; ' and I hope the

e next time he will be ushered into your inner apartment.'

Why should he not, Sir?' replied she; 'for whereever he is ushered, I am convinced he will behave him-

· felf as a gentleman should.'

Here Amelia put an end to the discourse, or it might have proceeded to very great lengths: for Booth was of a waggish inclination; and Mrs. Ellison was not a lady of the nicest delicacy. The heroic Behaviour of Colonel Bath.

BOOTH went this morning to pay a fecond visit to the colonel, where he found Colonel James. the colonel and the lieutenant appeared a little shocked at their first meeting, but matters were soon cleared up; for the former prefently advanced to the latter, shook him heartily by the hand, and faid, 'Mr. Booth, I am ' ashamed to see you; for I have injured you, and I heartily ask your pardon. I am now perfectly convinced, that what I hinted to my brother, and which I find had like to have produced such fatal confe-If you will be quences, was entirely groundless. ' contented with my asking your pardon, and spare me the difagreeable remembrance of what led me into my error, I shall esteem it as the highest obligation.

Booth answered, 'As to what regards yourfelf, my dear colonel, I am abundantly fatisfied; but as I am ' convinced fome rascal hath been my enemy with you ' in the cruellest manner, I hope you will not deny me ' the o portunity of kicking him through the world.'

' By all the dignity of man,' cries Colonel Bath, the boy speaks with spirit, and his request is reason-

able!

ing

hen

nt.' bud

ent

aid

ed,

er-

h-

es

n-

ar

ge

ly

ut

. 3

it

ot

ft

d

d

e

Colonel James hefitated a moment, and then whifpered Booth that he would give him all the fatisfaction imaginable concerning the whole affair, when they were alone together; upon which, Booth addressing himfelf to Colonel Bath, the discourse turned on other matters during the remainder of the evening, which was but short, and then both went away together, leaving Colonel Bath as well as it was possible to expect, more to the satisfaction of Booth than of Colonel James, who would not have been displeased if his wound had been more dangerous: for he was grown fomewhat weary of a disposition that he rather called captious than heroic, and which, as he every day more and more hated his wife, he apprehended might some time or other give him some trouble; for Bath was the most affectionate of brothers, and had often swore in the presence of James, that he would eat any man alive who should use

he

aw

tel

ey

W

br

fo

66

fio

his fifter ill.

Colonel Bath was well fatisfied that his brother and the lieutenant were gone out with a defign of tilting; from which he offered not a fyllable to diffuade them, as he was convinced it was right, and that Booth could not in honour take, nor the colonel give, any lefs fatisfaction. When they had been gone, therefore, about half an hour, he rang his bell, to enquire if there was any news of his brother: a question which he repeated every ten minutes, for the space of two hours; when having heard nothing of him, he began to conclude that

both were killed on the fpot.

Whilst he was in this state of anxiety, his sister came to see him; for, notwithstanding his desire of sceping it a secret, the duel had blazed all over the town. After receiving some kind congratulations on his safety, and some unkind hints concerning the warmth of his temper, the colonel asked her when she had seen her husband. She answered, not that morning. He then communicated to her his suspicions; told her, he was convinced his brother had drawn his sword that day; and that as neither of them had heard any thing from him, he began to apprehend the worst that could happen.

Neither Miss Bellamy nor Mrs. Cibber were ever in a greater consternation on the stage, than now appeared in the countenance of Mrs. James. 'Good heavens! brother,' cries she, 'what do you tell me! You

have frightened me to death. Let your man get me a glass of water immediately, if you have not a mind to see me die before your face. When, where, how

was this quarrel? Why did you not prevent it, if you knew of it? Is it not enough to be every day

tormenting me with hazarding your own life, but must you bring the life of one who you know must be, and

ought to be, so much the dearest of all to me, into danger? Take your sword, brother, take your sword,

and plunge it into my bosom; it would be kinder of

you, than to fill it with fuch dreads and terrors! Here she swallowed the glass of water; and then threw herself back in her chair, as if she had intended to faint

away.

of ie

ad

;

n,

S-

it

d

it

e

r

1

Perhaps, if the had fo, the colonel would have lent her no affiftance: for the had hurt him more than by ten thousand stabs. He sat creet in his chair, with his eye-brows knit, his forehead wrinkled, his eyes flashing with fire, his teeth grating against each other, and breathing horror all around him. In this posture he fat for some time filent, casting disdainful looks at his fifter. At last his voice found its way through a pasfion which had almost choaked him, and he cried out, Sifter, what have I done to deferve the opinion you express of me? Which of my actions hath made you conclude that I am a rafeal and a coward? Look at that poor fword, which never woman yet faw but in ' its sheath; what hath that done to merit your defire ' that it should be contaminated with the blood of a woman?

'Alas! brother,' cried she, 'I know not what you 'say; you are desirous, I believe, to terrify me out of the little senses I have left. What can I have said in the agonies of grief, into which you threw me, to

deferve this passion?'

What have you faid!' answered the colonel; 'you have said that which if a man had spoken, nay, d---n me, if he had but hinted that he durst even think, I would have made him eat my sword: by all the dignity of a man, I would have crumbled his foul into powder! But I consider that the words were spoken by a woman, and I am calm again. Consider, my dear, that you are my fister, and behave yourself with more spirit. I have only mentioned to you my surmise. It may not have happened as I suspect; but let what will have happened, you will have the comfort that your husband hath behaved himself with becoming dignity, and lies in the bed of honour.'

pt ex

th

he

it

ne

rea

th

th

or

ob

VO

m

vil

do

m

m

lo

Ja

de

ad

in

w

th

ot

ge

Ja

fel

CU

sh

66

"

it is a loss I cannot survive. But why do I sit here Iamenting myself; I will go this instant, and know the worst of my fate, if my trembling limbs will carry me to my coach. Good morrow, dear brother! whatever becomes of me, I am glad to find you out of danger.' The colonel paid her his proper compliments, and the then left the room; but returned instantly back, saying, 'Brother, I must beg the favour of you to let your footman step to my mantua-maker; I am fure it is a miracle, in my present distracted condition, how it came into my head.' The foot. man was prefently fummoned, and Mrs. James delivered him his meffage, which was to countermand the orders which fine had given that very morning, to make her up a new fuit of brocade. 'Heaven knows,' fays fhe, ' now, when I can wear brocade, or whether ever 'I shall wear it!' And now having repeated her melfage with great exactness, lest there should be any mistake, the again lamented her wretched fituation, and then departed; leaving the colonel in full expectation of hearing speedy news of the fatal issue of the battle.

But though the reader should entertain the same curiofity, we must be excused from satisfying it till we have first accounted for an incident which we have related in this very chapter, and which we think deferves fome folution. The critic, I am convinced, already is apprized, that I mean the friendly behaviour of James to Booth, which, from what we had before recorded,

feemed so little to be expected.

It must be remembered, that the anger which the former of these gentlemen had conceived against the latter, arose entirely from the false account given by Miss Matthews of Booth, whom that lady had accused to Co.onel James of having as basely as wickedly traduced his character.

Now, of all the ministers of vengeance, there are none with whom the devil deals fo treacherously as with those whom he employs in executing the mischievous dy;

here

now

will

ler!

out

pli-

in-

our

er;

Eted

oot-

eli-

the

ake

ays

ver

nef-

nif-

and

tion

cu-

we

re-

rves

y is

mes

led,

for-

ter,

lat-

onel

his

one

vith

ous Ir-

.

purposes of an angry mistres; for no sooner is revenge executed on an offending lover, than it is sture to be repented; and all the anger which before raged against the beloved object, returns with double fury on the head of his assassing.

Miss Matthews, therefore, no sooner heard that Booth was killed, (for so was the report at first, and by a colonel in the army) than she immediately concluded it to be James. She was extremely shocked with the news, and her heart instantly began to relent. All the reasons on which she had founded her love, recurred in the strongest and liveliest colours to her mind, and all the causes of her hatred sunk down and disappeared; or if the least remembrance of any thing which had disabliged her remained, her heart became his zealous advocate, and soon satisfied her that her own fates were more to be blamed than he, and that without being a villain, he could have acted no otherwise than he had done.

In this temper of mind, she looked on herself as the murderer of an innocent man; and, what to her was much worse, of the man she had loved, and still did love, with all the violence imaginable. She looked on James as the tool with which she had done this murder; and as it is usual for people who have rashly or inadvertently made any animate or inanimate thing the instrument of mischief, to hate the innocent means by which the mischief was effected; (for this is a subtle method which the mind invents to excuse ourselves, the last objects on whom we would willingly wreak our vengeance;) so Miss Matthews now hated and cursed James as the efficient cause of that act which she herself had contrived, and laboured to carry into execution.

She fat down therefore in a furious agitation, little hort of madness, and wrote the following letter:

"I Hope this will find you in the hands of justice, for the murder of one of the best friends that ever man was blessed with. In one sense, indeed, he may

" feem to have deferved his fate, by chufing a fool for " his friend; for who but a fool would have believed

" what the anger and rage of an injured woman fug. " getted? a ftory fo improbable, that I could fcarce be

" thought in earnest when I mentioned it.

"Know, then, cruel wretch, that poor Booth loved " you of all men breathing; and was, I believe, in " your commendation guilty of as much falshood, as

"I was in what I told you concerning him.

" If this knowledge makes you miserable, it is no " more than you have made the unhappy

F. MATTHEWS."

6

CHAP.

Being the last Chapter of the Fifth Book.

WE shall now return to Colonel James and Mr. Booth, who walked together from Colonel Bath's lodging with much more peaceable intention than that gentleman had conjectured, who dreamt of nothing but iwords, and guns, and implements of war.

The Birdcage Walk, in the Park, was the scene appointed by James for unburdening his mind. Thither they came, and there James acquainted Booth with all that which the reader knows already, and gave him the letter which we have inferted at the end of the last chapter.

Booth expressed great astonishment at this relation, not without venting some detestation of the wickedness of Miss Matthews; upon which James took him up, faying, he ought not to fpeak with fuch abhorrence of faults which love for him had occasioned.

' Can you mention love, my dear colonel,' eries Booth, ' and fuch a woman, in the fame breath?'

' Yes, faith, can I!' fays James; ' for the devil take me, if I know a more lovely woman in the " world!' Here he began to describe her whole person; but as we cannot infert all the description, so we shall omit it all; and concluded with faying, ' Curse me, if I don't think her the finest creature in the universe!

" I would give half my estate, Booth, she loved me as well as she doth you; though, on second considera-6 tion,

tion, I believe I should repent that bargain; for then, very possibly, I should not care a farthing for her.

for

ved

ug-

e be

ved

, in

110

. 17

Mr.

h's

hat

but

ap-

her

all

the

er.

on,

eis

up,

of

ies

vil

n;

all

if

e!

a.

'You will pardon me, dear colonel,' answered Booth; 'but to me there appears somewhat very singular in your way of thinking. Beauty is indeed the object of liking, great qualities of admiration, good ones of esteem; but the devil take me, if I think any thing but love to be the object of love.'

'Is there not fomething too felfish,' replied James, in that opinion? But without considering it in that light, is it not of all things the most insipid? all oil, all sugar; zounds! it is enough to cloy the sharp-set appetite of a parson. Acids, surely, are most likely to quicken?

to quicken.'
I do not love reasoning in allegories,' cries Booth;
but with regard to love, I declare I never found any
thing cloying in it. I have lived almost alone with
my wife near three years together, was never tired
with her company, nor ever wished for any other;
and, I am sure, I never tasted any of the acid you

' mention to quicken my appetite.' 'This is all very extraordinary and romantic to me,' answered the colonel. 'If I was to be shut up three ' years with the fame woman, which Heaven forbid! 'nothing, I think, could keep me alive, but a temper ' as violent as that of Miss Matthews. As to love, it ' would make me fick to death in the twentieth part of ' that time. If I was so condemned, let me see, what ' would I wish the woman to be? I think no one virtue ' will be fufficient. With the spirit of a tigress, I ' would have her be a prude, a scold, a scholar, a critic, a wit, a politician, and a Jacobite; and then, ' perhaps, eternal opposition would keep up our spi-' rits; and, wishing one another daily at the devil, we ' should make a shift to drag on a damnable state of · life, without much spleen or vapours.

'And so you do not intend,' cries Booth, 'to break'
with this woman?'
Not

'And you will be reconciled to her?' faid Booth.
'Yes, faith! will I, if I can,' answered the colo.
nel. 'I hope you have no objection?'

' None, my dear friend,' faid Booth, ' unless on

vour account.'

' I do believe you,' faid the colonel; ' and yet, let " me tell you, you are a very extraordinary man, not to defire me to quit her on your account. Upon my ' foul, I begin to pity the woman, who hath placed her affection, perhaps, on the only man in England, of your age, who would not return it. But for my part, I promise you, I like her beyond all other wo. men; and whilst that is the case, my boy, if her mind was as full of iniquity as Pandora's box was of difeases, I'd hug her close in my arms, and only take as much care as possible to keep the lid down, for ' fear of mischief. But come, dear Booth,' said he, · let us confider your affairs, for I am ashamed of having neglected them fo long; and the only anger I have against this wench is, that she was the occasion of it.

Booth then acquainted the colonel with the promises he had received from the noble lord: upon which James shook him by the hand, and heartily wished him joy, crying, 'I do affure you, if you have his interest, you 'will need no other; I did not know you was act quainted with him.'

To which Mr. Booth answered, that he was but a new acquaintance, and that he was recommended to

him by a lady.

'A lady!' cries the colonel: 'Well, I don't ask her name. You are a happy man, Booth, amongst the women; and I affure you, you could have no

fironger recommendation. The peer loves the ladies, I believe, as well as ever Mark Antony did; and it is not his fault, if he hath not spent as much

upon

6

6

6.

6

6

6

6

6

6

.

6

an

much upon them. If he once fixes his eyes upon a woman, he will flick at nothing to get her.'

'Ay, indeed!' cries Booth: 'Is that his character?'

Ay, faith!' answered the colonel, 'and the character of most men besides him. Few of them, I mean, will stick at any thing beside their money. Jusqu'a la bourse is sometimes the boundary of love, as well as friendship. And, indeed, I never knew any other man part with his money so very freely on these occasions. You see, dear Booth, the considence I have in your honour.'

'in your honour.'

an.

.

olo-

on

let

not

my

ced

nd,

my

WO-

her

was

nly

for

he,

av-

r I

fion

ifes

nes

oy,

you

ac-

it a

to

alk

gft

no

la-

id;

ich

H

'I hope, indeed, you have,' cries Booth; 'but I don't fee what instance you now give me of that confidence.'

'Have not I shewn you,' answered James, 'where 'you may carry your goods to market?' I can assure 'you, my friend, that is a secret I would not impart to every man in your situation, and all circumstances

' confidered.'

'I am very forry, Sir,' cries Booth, very gravely, and turning as pale as death, 'you should entertain a 'thought of this kind--a thought which hath almost frozen up my blood! I am unwilling to believe there are such villains in the world; but there is none of them whom I should detest half so much as myself if my own mind had ever suggested to me a hint of that kind. I have tasted of some distresses of life, and I know not to what greater I may be driven; but my honour, I thank Heaven, is in my own power; and I can boldly say to Fortune, she shall not rob me of it.'

'Have I not expressed that confidence, my dear 'Booth?' answered the colonel. 'And what you say 'now well justifies my opinion; for I do agree with 'you, that, considering all things, it would be the

' highest instance of dishonour.'

'Dishonour indeed!' returned Booth. What, to 'prostitute my wife! Can I think there is such a 'wretch breathing?'

Vol. II. 39. E 'I don't

' I don't know that,' faid the colonel; ' but I am fure it was very far from my intention to infinuate

the least hint of any such matter to you. Nor can I imagine how you yourfelf could conceive fuch a

thought. The goods I meant were no other than the charming person of Miss Matthews; for whom, I am

convinced, my lord would bid a fwinging price

against me.

Booth's countenance greatly cleared up at this declaration; and he answered, with a smile, that he hoped he need not give the colonel any affurances on that head. However, though he was fatisfied with regard to the colonel's fuspicions, yet some chimeras now arose in his brain, which gave him no very agreeable feniations. What these were, the fagacious reader may probably fuspect; but if he should not, we may, perhaps, have occasion to open them in the sequel. Here we will put an end to this dialogue, and to the fifth book of this history.

BOOK VI.

CHAP. I.

Panegyric on Beauty, with other grave Matters. THE colonel and Booth walked together to the latter's lodging; for as it was not that day in the week in which all parts of the town are indifferent, Booth could not wait on the colonel.

When they arrived in Spring Garden, Booth, to his great furprize, found no one at home but the maid. In truth, Amelia had accompanied Mrs. Ellison and her children to his lordship's; for as her little girl shewed? great unwillingness to go without her, the fond mother was eafily perfuaded to make one of the company.

Booth had scarce ushered the colonel up to his apartment, when a fervant from Mrs. James's knocked haftily at the door. The lady, not meeting with her husband at her return home, began to despair of him, and performed every thing which was decent on the oc-

cafi

hor

fen

one ant

wel

the

at I

ftre

and

wit

van

turi

10

4 di

I.

(V

(W · fc

f re

turr

chil

they

beer

five

Col

mof

kne

beca

fear

face

fo f

fe li

1 the casion. An apothecary was presently called with hartshorn and sal volatile, a doctor was sent for, and messengers were dispatched every way; amongst the rest, one was sent to enquire at the lodgings of his supposed antagonist.

The fervant, hearing that his mafter was alive and well above ftairs, ran up eagerly to acquaint him with the dreadful fituation in which he left his miferable lady at home, and likewife with the occasion of all her difters; faying, that his lady had been at her brother's, and had there heard that his honour was killed in a duel

with Captain Booth.

am

aate

n I

h a

the

am

rice

cla-

ped

ead.

the

his

ons.

ably

lave

put

this

lat-

the

ent,

his

In

her

eda

ther

art-

ha-

her

im,

oc-

The colonel finiled at this account, and bid the fervant make haste back to contradict it. And then, turning to Booth, he said, 'Was there ever such and other fellow as this brother of mine? I thought, indeed, his behaviour was somewhat odd at the time. I suppose he overheard me whisper that I would give you satisfaction, and thence concluded we went together with a design of tilting. D---n the fellow! I begin to grow heartily sick of him, and wish I could get well rid of him without cutting his throat; which I sometimes apprehend he will insist on my doing, as a return for my getting him made a lieutenant-colonel.

Whilst these two gentlemen were commenting on the character of the third, Amelia and her company returned, and all presently came up stairs; not only the children, but the two ladies, laden with trinkets, as if they had been come from a fair. Amelia, who had been highly delighted all the morning with the excessive pleasure which her children enjoyed, when she saw Colonel James with her husband, and perceived the most manifest marks of that reconciliation which she knew had been so long and so earnestly wished by Booth, became so transported with joy, that her happiness was scarce capable of addition. Exercise had painted her face with vermilion; and the highest good-humour had so sweetened every feature, and a vast slow of spirits had so lightened up her bright eyes, that she was all a blaze

of beauty. She feemed, indeed, as Milton fublimely describes Eve---adorn'd

With what all earth or heaven could bestow, To make her amiable.

Again,

Grace was in all her steps, heaven in her eye, In ev'ry gesture dignity and love.

Or, as Waller sweetly, though less sublimely, sings:
Sweetness, truth, and every grace,
Which time and use are wont to teach,

fo

co

fir

fre

ev

inc

an

wi

Fr

ha

of

an

to

pai

pu

pec

vet

fior

pro

equ

fer

by

The eye may in a moment reach, And read distinctly in her face.

Or to mention one poet more, and him of all the fweetest: she seemed to be the very person of whom Suckling wrote the following lines, where, speaking of Cupid, he says,

All his lovely looks, his pleasing fires,

All his fweet motions, all his taking smiles, All that awakes, all that inflames defires, All that sweetly commands, all that beguiles,

He does into one pair of eyes convey, And there begs leave that he himself may stay.

Such was Amelia at this time when she entered the room; and having paid her respects to the colonel, she went up to her husband, and cried, 'O my dear! ne'ver were any creatures so happy as your little things
have been this whole morning; and all owing to my
lord's goodness: fure, never was any thing so goodnatured, and so generous!' She then made the children produce their presents, the value of which amounted to a pretty large sum; for there was a gold watch amongst the trinkets that cost above twenty guineas.

Instead of discovering so much satisfaction on this occasion as Amelia expected, Booth very gravely answered: 'And pray, my dear, how are we to repay all these obligations to his lordship?'----' How can you ask so strange a question?' cries Mrs. Ellison:

how little do you know of the foul of generofity, (for

fure my coufin deserves that name) when you call a few little trinkets given to children an obligation!'--Indeed, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'I would have flopped his hand, if it had been possible; nay, I was forced at last absolutely to refuse, or I believe he would have laid a hundred pounds out on the children; for I never saw any one so fond of children, which convinces me he is one of the best of men. But I ask your pardon, colonel,' said she, turning to him, 'I should not entertain you with these subjects; yet I know you have goodness enough to excuse the folly of a mother.'

The colonel made a very low affenting bow; and foon after they all fat down to a finall repart; for the colonel had promifed Booth to dine with him when they first came home together; and what he had since heard from his own house, gave him still less inclination than

ever to repair thither.

elv

35:

the

om

of

the

fhe

ne-

ngs

my

od-

hil-

ited

tch

his

an-

pay

can

m:

for

re

But besides both these, there was a third and stronger inducement to him to pass the day with his friend; and this was the defire of passing it with his friend's wife. When the colonel had first seen Amelia in France, she was but just recovered from a consumptive habit, and looked pale and thin; befides, his engagements with Miss Bath at that time took total possession of him, and guarded his heart from the impressions of another woman; and when he had dined with her in town, the vexations through which she had lately passed, had somewhat deadened her beauty: besides, he was then engaged, as we have feen, in a very warm pursuit of a new mistress: but now he had no such impediment; for though the reader hath just before seen his warm declarations of a passion for Miss Matthews, yet it may be remembered that he had been in possestion of her for above a fortnight; and one of the happy properties of this kind of passion is, that it can with equal violence love half a dozen, or half a score, difterent objects, at one and the same time.

But, indeed, fuch were the charms now displayed by Amelia, of which we have endeavoured above to

of

bl

fu

of

be

di

bo

ba

ui

th fu

to

or

ki

te

an

fe

di

W

le

lo

ha

ex

le

pr

ch

ha

fu

hi

fo

ge

tin

draw some faint resemblance, that perhaps no other beauty could have secured him from their influence; and here, to confess a truth in his favour, however the grave, or rather the hypocritical part of mankind may censure it, I am firmly persuaded, that to withdraw admiration from exquisite beauty, or to feel no delight in gazing at it, is as impossible, as to feel no warmth from the most scorching rays of the sun. To run away is all that is in our power: and yet in the former case, if it must be allowed we have the power of running away, it must be allowed also, that it requires the strongest resolution to execute it; for when, as Dryden says,

All Paradise is opened in a face,

how natural is the defire of going thither! and how

difficult to quit the lovely prospect!

And yet, however difficult this may be, my young readers, it is absolutely necessary, and that immediately too: flatter not yourselves that fire will not scorch as well as warm; and the longer we fray within its reach. the more we shall burn. The admiration of a beautiful woman, though the wife of our dearest friend, may at first perhaps be innocent; but let us not flatter ourselves it will always remain fo: defire is fure to fucceed: and wifnes, hopes, defigns, with a long train of mischiefs, tread close at our heels. In affairs of this kind, we may most properly apply the well-known remark of nemo repente fuit turpishmus. It fares indeed with us on this occasion, as with the unwary traveller in some part of Arabia the Defart, whom the treacherous fands imperceptibly betray, till he is overwhelmed and loft. In both cases, the only safety is by withdrawing our feet the very first moment we perceive them sliding.

This digression may appear impertinent to some readers; we could not, however, avoid the opportunity of offering the above hints; since of all passions there is none against which we should so strongly fortify ourselves as this, which is generally called love: for no other lays before us, especially in the tumultuous days

her

e;

the

ay

aw

ht

th

ay le,

ng

he

en

W

g

i-

1-

S

d

,

e

f

e

\$

r

of youth, fuch fweet, fuch ftrong, and almost irrelistible temptations; none hath produced in private life fuch fatal and lamentable tragedies; and, what is worst of all, there is none to whose position and infatuation the best of minds are so liable. Ambition scarce ever produces any evil, but when it reigns in cruel and favage bosoms; and avarice seldom flourishes at all but in the basest and poorest soil. Love, on the contrary, sprouts usually up in the richest and noblest minds; but there, unless nicely watched, pruned, and cultivated, and carefully kept clear of those vicious weeds which are too apt to furround it, it branches forth into wildness and disorder, produces nothing defirable, but choaks up and kills whatever is good and noble in the mind where it fo abounds. In short, to drop the allegory, not only tenderness and good-nature, but bravery, generosity, and every virtue, are often made the instruments of etfecting the most atrocious purposes of this all all-subduing tyrant.

CHAP. II.

Which will not appear, we prefume, unnatural to all married Readers.

IF the table of poor Booth afforded but an indifferent repast to the colonel's hunger, here was most excellent entertainment of a much higher kind. The colonel began now to wonder within himself at his not having before discovered such incomparable beauty and excellence. This wonder was indeed so natural, that lest it should arise likewise in the reader, we thought proper to give the solution of it in the preceding chapter.

During the first two hours, the colonel scarce ever had his eyes off from Amelia; for he was taken by surprize, and his heart was gone before he suspected himself to be in any danger. His mind, however, no sooner suggested a certain secret to him, than it suggested some degree of prudence to him at the same time; and the knowledge that he had thoughts to conseal, and the care of concealing them, had birth at one

and the same instant. During the residue of the day, therefore, he grew more circumspect, and contented himself with now and then stealing a look by chance, especially as the more than ordinary gravity of Booth made him sear that his former behaviour had betrayed to Booth's observation the great and sudden liking he had conceived for his wife, even before he had observed it in himself.

Amelia continued the whole day in the highest spirits and highest good-humour imaginable; never once remarking that appearance of discontent in her husband, of which the colonel had taken notice; so much more quick-fighted, as we have fomewhere elfe hinted, is guilt than innocence! Whether Booth had in reality made any fuch observations on the colonel's behaviour as he had fuspected, we will not undertake to determine; yet so far may be material to say, as we can with fufficient certainty, that the change in Booth's behaviour that day, from what was usual with him, was remarkable enough. None of his former vivacity appeared in his conversation; and his countenance was altered from being the picture of sweetness and goodhumour, not indeed to fourness or moroseness, but to gravity and melancholy.

Though the colonel's suspicion had the effect which we have mentioned on his behaviour, yet it could not persuade him to depart. In short, he sat in his chair as if confined to it by enchantment, stealing looks now then, and humouring his growing passion, without having command enough over his limbs to carry him out of the room, till decency at last forced him to put an end to his preposterous visit. When the husband and wife were left alone together, the latter resumed the subject of her children, and gave Booth a particular narrative of all that had passed at his lordship's, which he, though something had certainly disconcerted him, affected to receive with all the pleasure he could; and this affectation, however aukwardly he acted his part, passed very well on Amelia; for the could not well con-

ceive

C

C

b

a

10

11

iı

tl

h

d

C

fo

h

C

f

to

fo

p

m

ceive a displeasure, of which she had not the least hint of any cause; and indeed at a time when, from his reconciliation with James, she imagined her husband to

be entirely and perfectly happy.

y,

ed

ce,

th

ed

he

ed

is

·6-

id,

ne

is

ty

ur

1-

an

's

n,

ty

as

d-

to

ch

ot

as

W

ut

m

ut

ad-

ed.

ar

ch

n,

nd

t,

1-

e

The greatest part of that night Booth passed awake; and if during the residue he might be said to sleep, he could scarce be said to enjoy repose; his eyes were no sooner closed, than he was pursued and haunted by the most frightful and terrifying dreams, which threw him into so restless a condition, that he soon disturbed his Amelia, and greatly alarmed her with apprehensions that he had been seized by some dreadful disease; though he had not the least symptoms of a sever by any extraordinary heat, or any other indication, but was rather colder than usual.

As Booth affured his wife that he was very well, but found no inclination to fleep, the likewife bid adieu to her flumbers, and attempted to entertain him with her conversation; upon which his lordship occurred as the first topic; and the repeated to him all the stories which she had heard from Mrs. Ellison, of the peer's goodness to his sister, and his nephew and niece. 'It is impossible, my dear,' says she, 'to describe their fondness' for their uncle, which is to me an incontestible sign of a parent's goodness.' In this manner she ran on for several minutes; concluding at last, that it was a pity so very sew had such generous minds joined to immense fortunes.

Booth, instead of making a direct answer to what Amelia had faid, cried coldly, 'But do you think, my 'dear, it was right to accept all those expensive toys 'which the children brought home? And I ask you 'again, what return are we to make for these obli-

gations?

'Indeed, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'you fee this matter in too ferious a light. Though I am the last perfon in the world who would lessen his lordship's goodness, (indeed I shall always think we are both infinitely obliged to him) yet sure you must allow the expence to be a mere trifle to such a vast fortune. As for return, his own benevolence, in the satisfaction it

receives, more than repays itself; and I am convinced

· he expects no other.'

'Very well, my dear,' cries Booth, 'you shall have it your way: I must confess I never yet saw any rea-

fon to blame your discernment; and, perhaps, I have been in the wrong, to give myself so much uneasiness

on this account.'

" Uneasiness, child!' said Amelia eagerly. " Good

heavens! hath this made you uneafy?"

' I do own it hath,' answered Booth; ' and it hath

been the only cause of breaking my repose.'

'Why then I wish,' cries Amelia, 'all the things had been at the devil, before ever the children had seen the children had seen the children had seen the children had seen the children with the consideration.

them; and whatever I may think myself, I promise you,
 they shall never more accept the value of a farthing.

If upon this occasion I have been the cause of your uneasines, you will do me the justice to believe that

" I was totally innocent."

At those words Booth caught her in his arms, and with the tenderest embrace, emphatically repeating the word innocent, cried, ' Heaven forbid I should think otherwise! O thou art the best of creatures that ever

bleffed a man!'

'Well but,' faid she smiling, 'do confes, my dear, the truth; I promise you, I won't blame you nor disesteem you for it; but is not pride really at the bot-

' tom of this fear of an obligation?'

Perhaps it may,' answered he; or, if you will, you may call it fear. I own I am afraid of obligations, as the worst kind of debts; for I have generally ob-

ferved those who confer them, expect to be repaid ten

6 thousand fold.'

Here ended all that is material of their discourse; and a little time afterwards, they both fell fast asleep in one another's arms; from which time Booth had no more restlessness, nor any farther perturbation in his dreams.

Their repose, however, had been so much disturbed

Y

h

fi

fi

h

in the former part of the night, that as it was very late before they enjoyed that fweet fleep I have just mentioned, they lay a-bed the next day till noon, when they both arose with the utmost chearfulness; and while Amelia bestirred herself in the affairs of her family, Booth went to vifit the wounded colonel.

He found that gentleman still proceeding very fast in his recovery, with which he was more pleafed than he had reason to be with his reception; for the colonel received him very coldly indeed, and when Booth told him he had received perfect fatisfaction from his brother, Bath erected his head, and answered with a sneer, ' Very well, Sir, if you think these matters can be so made up, d---n me, if it is any bufiness of mine. " My dignity hath not been injured."

' No one, I believe,' cries Booth, ' dares injure it.' ' You believe so!' faid the colonel; ' I think, Sir,

vou might be affured of it; but this, at least, you ' may be affured of, that if any man did, I would tum-

ble him down the precipice of hell, d---n me, that

' you may be affured of.'

d

e

-

e

S

d

h

S

t

d

k

r

u

n

1

As Booth found the colonel in this disposition, he had no great inclination to lengthen out his visit, nor did the colonel himself seem to desire it; so he soon returned back to his Amelia, whom he found performing the office of a cook, with as much pleasure as a fine lady generally enjoys in dreffing herfelf out for a ball.

CHAP.

In which the History looks a little backwards.

BEFORE we proceed farther in our history, we shall recount a short scene to our reader, which passed between Amelia and Mrs. Ellison whilst Booth was on his visit to Colonel Bath. We have already observed, that Amelia had conceived an extraordinary affection for Mrs. Bennet, which still increased every time sne saw her. She thought she discovered something wonderfully good and gentle in her countenance and dispolition, and was very defirous of knowing her whole history.

She had a very short interview with that lady this morning in Mrs. Ellison's apartment. As foon, therefore, as Mrs. Bennet was gone, Amelia acquainted Mrs. Ellison with the good opinion she had of her friend, and likewife with her curiofity to know her flory: ' For there must be fomething uncommonly " good,' faid fhe, ' in one who can fo truly mourn for

' a husband above three years after his death.'

'O,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'to be fure the world must allow her to have been one of the best of wives. And ' indeeed, upon the whole, fhe is a good fort of wo-' man; and what I like her the best for, is a strong resemblance that the bears to yourself in the form of her person, and still more in her voice. For my own part, I know nothing remarkable in her fortune, un-· less what I have told you; that she was the daughter of a clergyman, had little or or no fortune, and mar-" ried a poor parson for love, who left her in the utmost diffress. If you please, I will shew you a letter which she writ to me at that time, though I infift upon your promise never to mention it to her; indeed you will be the first person I ever shewed it to.' She then opened her fcrutoire, and taking out the letter, delivered it to Amelia, faying, ' There, Madam, is, I believe, as fine a picture of diffress as can well be drawn.'

" DEAR MADAM,

S I have no other friend on earth but yourfelf, I A " hope you will pardon my writing to you at " this feafon; though I do not know that you can re-" lieve my diftreffes, or if you can, have I any pre-" tence to expect that you thould. My poor dear, 0 " heavens! --- my ---- lies dead in the house, and after " I had procured fufficient to bury him, a fet of ruf-" fians have entered my house, seized all I have, have " feized his dear, dear corpfe, and threaten to deny it " burial. For Heaven's fake, fend me, at least, some " advice; little Tommy stands now by me crying for " bread, which I have not to give him. I can fay 64 mo

" no more, than that I am your diffressed humble " fervant,

" M. BENNET."

Amelia red the letter over twice, and then returning it, wi h tears in her eyes, asked how the poor creature

could possibly get through such distress.

' You may depend upon it, Madam,' faid Mrs. Ellifon, ' the moment I read this account, I posted away · immediately to the lady. As to the feizing the body, that I found was a mere bugbear; but all the rest was · literally true. I fent immediately for the same gentleman that I recommended to Mr. Booth, left the care of burying the corple to him, and brought my friend and her little boy immediately away to my own house, where she remained some months in the most miferable condition. I then prevailed with her to retire ' into the country, and procured her a lodging with a ' friend at St. Ldmund's Bury, the air and gaiety of which place by degrees recovered her; and the re-' turned in about a twelvemonth to town, as well, I ' think, as she is at present.'

' I am almost afraid to ask,' cries Amelia, ' and ' yet I long, methinks, to know what is become of the

' poor little boy.'

nis

re-

ed

er.

ler.

ly

or

uft

nd 0-

ng

of

wn

nter

ır-

oft

ter

lift

n-

0. t-

n,

ell

I

at

e-9

-9 0

el' f-

ve it

ne

OI'

w J

' He hath been dead,' faid Mrs. Ellison, ' a little ' more than half a year; and the mother lamented him at first almost as much as she did her husband; but I found it indeed rather an easier matter to comfort her, though I fat up with her near a fortnight upon the

· latter occasion.'

'You are a good creature,' faid Amelia, 'and I

· love you dearly.'

' Alas, Madam,' cries fhe, ' what could I have done, if it had not been for the goodness of that best of men, my noble cousin! His lordship no sooner heard of the widow's diffress from me, than he imme-

diately fettled one hundred and fifty pounds a year ' upon her during her life.'

' Well! how noble, how generous was that!' faid Vol. II. Amelia. 39.

Amelia. 'I declare I begin to love your coufin, Mrs. 'Ellifon.'

And I declare, if you do,' answered she, ' there is no love lost, I verily believe; if you had heard what I heard him say yesterday behind your back----'

Why, what did he fay, Mrs. Ellison?' cries

Amelia.

'He faid,' answered the other, 'that you was the finest woman his eyes ever beheld. Ah! it is in vain to wish, and yet I cannot help wishing too. O Mrs. Booth! if you had been a single woman, I sirmly believe I could have made you the happiest in the

world; and I fincerely think, I never faw a woman

who deferved it more.'

'I am obliged to you, Madam,' cries Amelia, 'for your good opinion; but I really look on myself already as the happiest woman in the world. Our circumstances, it is true, might have been a little more
fortunate; but, O my dear Mrs. Ellison, what fortune can be put into the balance with such a husband
as mine!'

I am afraid, dear Madam,' answered Mrs. Ellison,
you would not hold the scale fairly. I acknowledge,
indeed, Mr. Booth is a very pretty gentleman; Heaven forbid I should endeavour to lessen him in your

opinion! yet, if I was to be brought to confession, I

could not help faying, I fee where the fuperiority lies, and that the men have more reason to envy Mr. Booth, than the women have to envy his lady.

Nay, I will not bear this,' cries Amelia: 'you will forfeit all my love, if you have the least diffefpectful opinion of my husband. You do not know him, Mrs. Ellifon; he is the best, the kindest, the worthiest of all his sex. I have observed, indeed,

once or twice before, that you have taken some dislike to him. I cannot conceive for what reason. If

he hath faid or done any thing to disoblige you, I am fure I can justly acquit him of design. His extreme

vivacity makes him fometimes a little too heedles;

but

6

6

6

6

.

6 1

6

6

6

6

6 1

for

6 f

c 1

6]

6 i

fai

e t

. .

but, I am convinced, a more innocent heart, or one more void of offence, was never in a human bosom.'

' Nay, if you grow ferious,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'I have done. How is it possible you should suspect I had taken any diflike to a man to whom I have always ' shewn so perfect a regard! But to say I think him, or almost any other man in the world worthy of yourfelt, is not within my power, with truth. And fince vou force the confession from me, I declare, I think fuch beauty, fuch fense, and fuch goodness united, ' might aspire without vanity to the arms of any mo-

' narch in Europe.'

13.

e is

hat

ies

the

ain

TS. be-

the

an

for

al-

ir-

ore

or-

ind

on, re,

aur

I

ity lr.

ou

·e-

W

he

d, if-

If

FIT

ne

; t

' Alas! my dear Mrs. Ellison, 'answered Amelia, ' do you think happiness and a crown so closely united? ' How many miserable women have lain in the arms of 'kings! Indeed, Mrs. Ellison, if I had all the merit 'you compliment me with, I should think it all fully. ' rewarded with fuch as man as, I thank Heaven, hath ' fallen to my lot; nor would I, upon my foul, ex-'change that lot with any queen in the universe.'

' Well, there are enow of our fex,' faid Mrs. Ellifon, ' to keep you in countenance; but I shall never ' forget the beginning of a fong of Mr. Congreve's, 'that my husband was so fond of, that he was always

' finging it.

" Love's but a frailty of the mind,

"When 'tis not with ambition join'd."

Love without interest makes but an unfavoury dish, ' in my opinion.'

' And pray how long hath this been your opinion?'

faid Amelia, fmiling.

' Ever fince I was born,' answered Mrs. Ellison; at least, ever fince I can remember.'

' And have you never,' faid Amelia, ' deviated from

this generous way of thinking?"

' Never once,' answered the other, ' in the whole

course of my life.'

'O Mrs. Ellison! Mrs. Ellison!' cries Amelia; why do we ever blame those who are disingenuous in F 2 conconfessing their faults, when we are so often ashamed to own ourselves in the right? Some women now, in my situation, would be angry that you had not made considered to them; but I never desire to know more of the secrets of others, than they are pleased to entrust me with. You must believe, however, that I should not have given you these hints of my knowing

all, if I had disapproved of your choice. On the contrary, I assure you, I highly approve it. The gentility he wants, it will be easy in your power to

procure for him; and as for his good qualities, I will
myfelf be bound for them: and I make not the leaft
doubt, as you have owned to me yourfelf that you
have placed your affections on him, you will be one

of the happiest women in the world.

Upon my honour, cries Mrs. Ellifon, very gravely,
 I do not understand one word of what you mean!

'Upon my honour, you aftonish me,' said Amelia;

but I have done.'

Nay then,' faid the other, I infift upon knowing what you mean.'

' Why, what can I mean,' answered Amelia, ' but

your marriage with Serjeant Atkinson?'

'With Serjeant Atkinson!' cries Mrs. Ellison, eagerly: 'my marriage with a serjeant!'

Well, with Mr. Atkinson then; Captain Atkin-

fon, if you please; for so I hope to see him.'

'And have you really no better opinion of me,' faid Mrs. Ellison, 'than to imagine me capable of fuch a condescension? What have I done, dear Mrs.

to

al

p

fo

n

Booth, to deserve so low a place in your esteem? I find, indeed, as Solomon says, Women ought to available to

the door of their lips. How little did I imagine that a little harmless freedom in discourse could persuade any one that I could entertain a serious intention of dis-

gracing my family; for of a very good family am I come, I affure you, Madam, though I now let lodg-

ings. Few of my lodgers, I believe, ever came of a better.'

If I have offended you, Madam, faid Amelia, I am forry, and ask your pardon; but besides what I

heard from yourfelf, Mr. Booth told me.'

O yes, answered Mrs. Ellison, Mr. Booth, I know, is a very good friend of mine. Indeed, I know you better, than to think it could be your own fuspicion. I am very much obliged to Mr. Booth, truly.

'Nay,' cries Amelia, 'the ferjeant himfelf is in fault; for Mr. Booth, I am positive, only repeated

what he had from him.'

ned

in

de

ore

en-

tI

ng

the

he

to

Illiv

aft

ou

ne

ly,

a;

ng

ut

a-

11-

,'

of

s.

I

ch

2

17

i-I

Impudent coxcomb! cries Mrs. Ellison; Ishall know how to keep such fellows at a proper distance for the future. I will tell you, dear Madam, all that happened. When I rose in the morning, I found the fellow waiting in the entry; and, as you had express fome regard for him as your foster-brother, (nay, he is a very genteel fellow, that I must own) I scolded my maid for not shewing him into my little back room; and I then asked him to walk into the parlour. Could I have imagined he would have construed such little civility into an encouragement?

'Nay, I will have justice done to my poor brother, too, 'faid Amelia. 'I myself have seen you give

him much greater encouragement than that.

Well, perhaps I have, faid Mrs. Ellifon; I have always been too unguarded in my speech, and cannot answer for all I have said. She then began to change her note, and with an affected laugh turned all into ridicule; and soon afterwards the two ladies separated, both in apparent good humour; and Amelia went about those domestic offices, in which Mr. Booth found her engaged at the end of the preceding chapter.

CHAP. IV.

Containing a very extraordinary Incident.

In the afternoon, Mr. Booth, with Amelia and her children, went to refresh themselves in the Park. The conversation now turned on what passed in the morning with Mrs. Ellison; the latter part of the dialogue,

logue, I mean, recorded in the last chapter. Amelia told her husband, that Mrs. Ellison so strongly denied all intentions to marry the serjeant, that she had convinced her the poor fellow was under an error, and had mistaken a little too much levity for serious encouragement; and concluded, by desiring Booth not to jest

with her any more on that fubject.

Booth burst into a laugh at what his wife faid. ' My dear creature,' faid he, ' how easy is thy honesty and fimplicity to be imposed on! how little dost thou guess at the art and falshood of women! I knew a ' young lady, who, against her father's consent, was ' married to a brother officer of mine; and as I often " used to walk with her (for I knew her father inti-" mately well), she would of her own accord take frequent occasions to ridicule and vilify her husband, (for ' fo he was at the time) and exprest great wonder and ' indignation at the report which she allowed to prevail, that the should condescend ever to look at such a fel-· low, with any other defign than of laughing at and despising him. The marriage afterwards became publicly owned, and the lady was reputably brought to bed: fince which I have often feen her, nor hath " she ever appeared to be in the least ashamed of what " she had formerly said; though, indeed, I believe she hates me heartily for having heard it.'

But for what reason,' cries Amelia, should she deny a fact, when she must be so certain of our discover-

' ing it, and that immediately?'

I cannot answer what end she may propose,' said Booth. Sometimes one would be almost persuaded that there was a pleasure in lying itself. But of this I am certain, that I would believe the honest serjeant on his bare word, sooner than I would sifty Mrs. El-

faid what he did to me, without the strongest encou-

ragement; and, I think, after what we have been both witnesses to, it requires no great confidence in

his

h

fh

h

his veracity, to give him an unlimited credit with regard to the lady's behaviour.'

13

ed

11-

ad e-

eft

d.

ty

ou

2

as

en

1-

e-

or

nd

il,

el-

nd

ne

ht

th

at

he

ny

r-

iid

ed

nt 1-

ve

11-

en

in

S

nis (

To this Amelia made no reply; and they discoursed of other matters during the remainder of a very pleafant

When they returned home, Amelia was furprized to find an appearance of disorder in her apartment. Several of the trinkets, which his lordship had given the children, lay about the room; and a fuit of her own cloaths, which she had left in her drawers, was now displayed upon the bed.

She immediately fummoned her little girl up stairs, who, as fhe plainly perceived the moment she came up with a candle, had half cried her eyes out; for though the girl had opened the door to them, as it was almost dark, the had not taken any notice of this phænomenon in her countenance.

The girl now fell down upon her knees, and cried, For Heaven's fake, Madam, do not be angry with Indeed, I was left alone in the house, and hearing fomebody knock at the door, I opened it, I am fure, thinking no harm. I did not know but it ' might have been you, or my master, or Madam El-' lifon; and immediately as I did, the rogue burft in, ' and ran directly up stairs, and what he hath robbed 'you of I cannot tell; but I am fure I could not help it, for he was a great fwingeing man, with a piftol in each hand; and if I had dared to call out, to be fure he would have killed me. I am fure I never was in ' fuch a fright in my born days, whereof I am hardly ' come to myself yet. I believe he is somewhere about the house yet, for I never saw him go out.'

Amelia discovered some little alarm at this narrative, but much less than many other ladies would have shewn; for a fright is, I believe, sometimes laid hold of as an opportunity of disclosing several charms peculiar to that occasion; and which, as Mr. Addison

fays of certain virtues,

----- flun the day, and lie conceal'd, In the smooth sealons and the calms of life.

Booth having opened the window, and fummoned in two chairmen to his affiftance, proceeded to fearch the house; but all to no purpose: the thief was flown, though the poor girl, in her state of terror, had not seen

him escape.

But now a circumstance appeared which greatly surprized both Booth and Amelia; indeed, I believe, it will have the same effect on the reader; and this was, that the thief had taken nothing with him. He had, indeed, tumbled over all Booth's and Amelia's clothes, and the children's toys, but had left all behind him.

Amelia was scarce more pleased than astonished at this discovery, and re-examined the girl; assuring her of an absolute pardon, if she confessed the truth; but grievously threatening her if she was found guilty of the least falshood. 'As for a thief, child,' says she, that is certainly not true; you have had somebody with you, to whom you have been shewing the things;

therefore, tell me plainly who it was.'

The girl protested in the solemnest manner that she knew not the person; but as to some circumstances she began to vary a little from her first account, particularly as to the pistols; concerning which, being strictly examined by Booth, she at last cried, 'To be sure, 'Sir, he must have had pistols about him.' And instead of persisting in his having rushed in upon her, she now confessed, that he had asked at the door for her master and mistres; and that at his desire she had shewn him up stairs, where he at first said he would stay till their return home. 'But, indeed,' cried she, 'I' thought no harm; for he looked like a gentleman-

like fort of a man. And, indeed, so I thought he was for a good while, whereof he sat down and be-

haved himself very civilly, till he saw some of master's and miss's things upon the chest of drawers; whereof

he cried, "Heyday! what's here?" and then he fell to tumbling about the things like any mad. Then

· I thinks,

I thinks, thinks I to myfelf, to be fure he is a highwayman, whereof I did not dare to fpeak to him: for
I knew Madam Ellison and her maid was gone out,
and what could such a poor girl as I do against a
great strong man! And besides, thinks I, to be sure
he hath got pistols about him, which I cannot indeed (that I will not do for the world) take my bibleoath that I saw any; yet to be sure he would have
foon pulled them out, and shot me dead, if I had

ventured to have faid any thing to offend him.'

I know not what to make of this,' cries Booth.

The poor girl, I verily believe, speaks to the best of her knowledge. A thief it could not be; for he hath not taken the least thing; and it is plain he had the girl's watch in his hand. If it had been a bailist, furely he would have staid till our return. I can conceive no other from the girl's account, than that

it must have been some madman.'

đ

h

1,

n

it

1,

S,

at

er

it

le.

e,

ly

;

ne

ne

1-

ly

e,

11-

ne

er

vn

ill

I

n-

he

e-

's

ot

ell

en

,

"O good Sir,' faid the girl, " now you mention it, if he was not a thief, to be fure he must have been a ' madman; for indeed he looked, and behaved himself ' too, very much like a madman: for now I remember, he talked to himself, and said many strange kind of words, that I did not understand. Indeed, he ' looked altogether as I have feen people in Bedlam: befides, if he was not a madman, what good could it ' do him to throw the things all about the room in fuch 'a manner? And he faid fomething too about my ' master, just before he went down stairs; I was in ' fuch a fright, I cannot remember particularly; but I am fure they were very ill words: he faid he would do for him, I am fure he faid that, and other wicked bad words too, if I could but think of them.'

'Upon my word,' faid Booth, 'this is the most probable conjecture; but still I am puzzled to conceive who it should be: for I have no madman to my knowledge of my acquaintance; and it seems, as the girl says, he asked for me.' He then turned to the child,

child, and asked her if the was certain of that circum. stance.

The poor maid, after a little hefitation, answered, ' Indeed, Sir, I cannot be very positive; for the fright he threw me into afterwards, drove every thing al-

" most out of my mind."

' Well, whatever he was,' cries Amelia, ' I am glad the consequence is no worse; but let this be a warn-

ing to you, little Betty, and teach you to take more care for the future. If ever you should be left alone

' in the house again, be fure to let no persons in, without first looking out at the window, and feeing who

they are. I promised not to chide you any more on

this occasion, and I will keep my word; but it is " very plain you defired this person to walk up into

our apartment, which was very wrong, in our ab-

fence.'

Betty was going to answer, but Amelia would not let her, faying, 'Don't attempt to excuse yourself; for 'I mortally hate a liar, and can forgive any fault ' fooner than falshood.'

The poor girl then submitted; and now Amelia with her affiftance began to replace all things in their order; and little Emily hugging her watch with great fondness, declared she would never part with it any more.

Thus ended this odd adventure, not entirely to the fatisfaction of Booth: for, besides his curiosity, which, when thoroughly rouzed, is a very troublesome passion, he had, as is, I believe, usual with all persons in his circumstances, several doubts and apprehensions of he knew not what. Indeed, fear is never more uneafy, than when it doth not certainly know it's object: for on fuch occasions the mind is ever employed in raising a thousand bug-bears and phantoms, much more dreadful than any realities; and like children, when they tell tales of hobgoblins, feems industrious in terrifying itlelf.

CHAP.

I

I

fi

n

P

0

P

fin

pi

fp

q

10

Containing some Matters not very unnatural.

MATTERS were fearce fooner reduced into order and decency, than a violent knocking was heard at the door; fuch indeed as would have perfuaded any one not accustomed to the sound, that the madman was returned in the highest spring-tide of his fury.

Instead, however, of so disagreeable an appearance a very fine lady presently came into the room, no other indeed than Mrs. James herfelf! for she was resolved to flew Amelia, by the speedy return of her visit, how unjust all her accusations had been of any failure in the duties of friendship: she had moreover another reason to accelerate this visit, and that was, to congratulate her friend on the event of the duel between Colonel Bath and Mr. Booth.

The lady had so well profited by Mrs. Booth's remonstrance, that she had now no more of that stiffness and formality which she had worn on a former occa-On the contrary, fhe now behaved with the utmost freedom and good-humour, and made herself so very agreeable, that Amelia was highly pleafed and

An incident happened during this vifit, that may appear to some too inconsiderable in itself to be recorded; and yet, as it certainly produced a very strong consequence in the mind of Mr. Booth, we cannot prevail on

ourselves to pass it by.

delighted with her company.

it

d

1-

e

le

-

0

n

is

0

)_

ot

r

lt

a

ir

it

y

le

1,

1,

S

e

r

-

Little Emily, who was prefent in the room while Mrs. James was there, as she stood near that lady, happened to be playing with her watch, which she was fo greatly overjoyed had escaped safe from the madman. Mrs. James, who exprest great fondness for the child, defired to see the watch, which she commended as the prettiest of the kind she had ever seen.

Amelia caught eager hold of this opportunity to spread the praises of her benefactor. She presently acquainted Mrs. James with the donor's name, and ran on with great encomiums on his lordship's goodness, and

particularly

particularly on his generofity. To which Mrs. James answered, O certainly, Madam, his lordship hath univerfally the character of being extremely generous · ----where he likes.'

In uttering these words she laid a very strong emphasis on the three last monofyllables, accompanying them at the same time with a very sagacious look, a very fignificant leer, and a great flirt with her fan.

The greatest genius the world hath ever produced,

observes in one of his most excellent plays, that

----Trifles light as air, Are to the jealous confirmations frong As proofs of holy writ.

That Mr. Booth began to be possessed by this worst of fiends, admits, I think, no longer doubt; for at this speech of Mrs. James, he immediately turned pak, and from a high degree of chearfulness, was all on a fudden struck dumb, so that he spoke not another

6

word till Mrs. James left the room. The moment that lady drove from the door, Mrs. Ellison came up stairs. She entered the room with a laugh, and very plentifully raillied both Booth and Amelia concerning the madman, of which she had received a full account below stairs; and at last asked Amelia, if the could not guess who it was; but, without receiving an answer, went on, saying, ' For ' my own part, I fancy it must be some lover of ' yours; some person that hath seen you, and so is run ' mad with love. Indeed, I should not wonder if all mankind were to do the fame----La! Mr. Booth, what makes you grave? why, you are as melancholy

as if you had been robbed in earnest. Upon my word, though, to be ferious, it is a strange story;

and as the girl tells it, I know not what to make of it. Perhaps it might be some rogue that intended to

rob the house, and his heart failed him; yet, even that would be very extraordinary .--- What, did you

' lose nothing, Madam?' Nothing

Nothing at all, answered Amelia. He did not even take the child's watch.

Well, captain, cries Mrs. Ellison, I hope you will take more care of the house to-morrow; for your lady and I shall leave you alone to the care of it....
Here, Madam, faid she, here is a present from my lord to us; here are two tickets for the masquerade at Ranelagh. You will be so charmed with it-----it is the sweetest of all diversions.

' May I be damned, Madam,' cries Booth, ' if my

' wife shall go thither!'

nes

ath

us

m-

ing

, a

ed;

orft

at.

ale,

n a

her

Irs.

rith

and had

ked

For

of

run

all

oth,

oly

my

ry;

e of

ven

1g

Mrs. Ellison started at these words; and, indeed, so did Amelia, for they were spoke with great vehemence. At length the former cried out with an air of astonishment, 'Not let your lady go to Ranelagh, 'Sir?'

'No, Madam,' cries Booth; 'I will not let my

wife go to Ranelagh.'

'You furprize me,' cries Mrs. Ellison. 'Sure you are' not in earnest?'

'Indeed, Madam,' returned he, 'I am seriously in earnest. And what is more, I am convinced she would of her own accord refuse to go.'

'Now, Madam,' faid Mrs. Ellison, 'you are to an-'swer for yourself; and I will for your husband, that, 'if you have a desire to go, he will not refuse you.'

'I hope, Madam,' answered Amelia, with great gravity, 'I shall never defire to go to any place con-

trary to Mr. Booth's inclinations.

Did ever mortal hear the like!' faid Mrs. Ellison; you are enough to spoil the best husband in the universe. Inclinations! what, is a woman to be governed by her husband's inclinations, though they are ever so unreasonable?'

'Pardon me, Madam,' faid Amelia; 'I will not fuppose Mr. Booth's inclinations ever can be unreasonable. I am very much obliged to you for the offer you have made me, but I beg you will not mension it more; for, after what Mr. Booth hath declared,

Vol. II. 39. G Sooth hath declared

if Ranelagh was a heaven upon earth, I would refuse

to go for it.'

'I thank you, my dear,' cries Booth; 'I do affure ' you, you oblige me beyond my power of expression · by what you fay; but I will endeavour to fnew you both by my fenfibility of fuch goodness, and my last.

' ing gratitude to it.'

'And pray, Sir,' cries Mrs. Ellison, ' what can be your objection to your lady's going to a place, which I will venture to fay is as reputable as any about town, and which is frequented by the best com-

pany?

' Pardon me, good Mrs. Ellison,' faid Booth. As my wife is so good to acquiesce without knowing my reasons, I am not, I think, obliged to assign

them to any other person.'

" Well,' cries Mrs. Ellison, " if I had been told this, I would not have believed it. What, refuse ' your lady an innocent diversion; and that too, when you have not the pretence to fay it would cost you a

farthing!

Why will you fay any more on this subject, dear ' Madam?' cries Amelia. ' All diversions are to me matters of fuch indifference, that the bare inclinations of any one for whom I have the least value, would at all times turn the balance of mine. I am fure, then, after what Mr. Booth hath faid-----

f

f

h

h

f

'My dear,' cries he, taking her up hastily, 'I fincerely ask your pardon; I spoke inadvertently, and in a passion; I never once thought of controlling ' you, nor ever would. Nay, I faid in the fame breath, ' you would not go; and, upon my honour, I meant " nothing more."

' My dear,' faid she, ' you have no need of making any apology. I am not in the least offended; and

am convinced you will never deny me what I defire.' 'Try him, try him, Madam,' cries Mrs. Ellison; I will be judged by all the women in town, if it is · possible

one possible for a wife to ask her husband any thing more reasonable. You cannot conceive what a sweet, charming, elegant, delicious place it is. Paradife ' iffelf can hardly be equal to it.'

' I beg you will excuse me, Madam,' said Amelia;

nay, I entreat you will ask me no more, for be affured I must and will refuse. Do let me desire you to give the ticket to poor Mrs. Bennet. I believe it would

greatly oblige her.'

' Pardon me, Madam,' faid Mrs. Ellison. 'If you will not accept of it, I am not so distressed for want of company to go to fuch a public place with all ' forts of people, neither. I am always very glad to ' fee Mrs. Bennet at my own house, because I look upon her as a very good fort of woman; but I 'don't chuse to be seen with such people in public places.'

ife

ire

011

ou

It-

an

ce,

ny

n-

h.

ng

old

ife

en

1

ar

ne

a-

ie,

m

,

11-

nd

19

h,

nt

nd

1;

15

Amelia exprest some little indignation at this last fpeech, which she declared to be entirely beyond her comprehension; and soon afterwards Mrs. Ellison, finding all her efforts to prevail on Amelia were ineffeetual, took her leave, giving Mr. Booth two or three farcastical words, and a much more sarcastical look, at her departure.

CHAP. VI.

A Scene, in which some Ladies will tossibly think Amelia's Conduct exceptionable.

BOOTH and his wife being left alone, a folemn filence prevailed during a few minutes. At last Amelia, who though a good was yet a human creature, faid to her husband, ' Pray, my dear, do inform me what could put you into fo great a passion when Mrs. Ellison first offered me the ticket for this masque-

" rade ?"

' I had rather you would not ask me,' faid Booth. You have obliged me greatly in your ready acquiescence with my desire, and you will add greatly to the obligation by not enquiring the reason of ir.

This you may depend upon, Amelia, that your good and happiness are the great objects of all my wishes,

and the end I propose in all my actions. This view alone could tempt me to refuse you any thing, or to

conceal any thing from you.'

' I will appeal to yourfelf,' answered she, ' whether this be not using me too much like a child; and " whether I can possibly help being a little offended at " it."

' Not in the leaft,' replied he. ' I use you only with the tenderness of a friend. I would only endea-' vour to conceal that from you, which I think would give you uneafiness if you knew. These are called

" the pious frauds of friendship." 'I detest all frauds,' faid she: ' and pious is too good an epithet to be joined to fo odious a word. You have often, you know, tried those frauds with no better effect than to teaze and torment me. You a cannot imagine, my dear, but that I must have a violent defire to know the reason of words which, I own, I never expected to have heard. And the more you have shewn a reluctance to tell me, the more eagerly 'I have longed to know. Nor can this be called a vain curiofity, fince I feem so much interested in this affair. If after all this you still insist on keeping the fecret, I will convince you I am not ignorant of the

duty of a wife, by my obedience; but I cannot help telling you at the same time, you will make me one

6

of the most miserable of women.'

'That is,' cries he, 'in other words, my dear Emily, to fay, I will be contented without the fecret, but I am refolved to know it nevertheless.'

' Nay, if you fay fo,' cries she, ' I am convinced ' you will tell me. Positively, dear Billy, I must and

will know.'

' Why then positively,' fays Booth, ' I will tell you. And I think I shall then shew you, that however well you may know the duty of a wife, I am not always

always able to behave like a husband. In a word, then, my dear, the secret is no more than this: I am unwilling you should receive any more presents from my lord.

'Mercy upon me!' cries she, with all the marks of

aftonishment; what a masquerade ticket!'

'Yes, my dear,' cries he; that is perhaps the very worst and most dangerous of all. Few men make presents of those tickets to ladies, without intending to meet them at the place. And what do we know of your companion? To be sincere with you, I have not liked her behaviour for some time. What might be the consequence of going with such a woman to such a place, to meet such a person, I tremble to think. And now, my dear, I have told you my reason of refusing her offer with some little vehemence; and, I think, I need explain myself no farther.'

'You need not indeed, Sir,' answered she. 'Good heavens! did I ever expect to hear this! I can appeal to yourself, Mr. Booth, if I have ever done any thing to deserve such a suspicion. If ever any action of mine, nay, if ever any thought had stained the in-

' nocence of my foul, I could be contented.'

' How cruelly do you mistake me!' said Booth; what suspicion have I ever shewn?'

' Can you ask it,' answered she, ' after what you

' have just now declared!'

boo

les,

iew

to.

her

and at

nly

ea-

ıld

led

too

ou

no ou

10-

vn,

ou

rly

a

he

he

elp

ne

ar

et.

ed

nd

ell

V-

ot

If I have declared any suspicion of you, replied he, or if I ever entertained a thought leading that way, may the worst of evils that ever afflicted human nature attend me! I know the pure innocence of that tender bosom; I do know it, my lovely angel, and adore it. The snares which might be laid for that innocence were alone the cause of my apprehension. I feared what a wicked and voluptuous man, resolved to facrifice every thing to the gratification of a sense such a such

attempt. If ever I injured the unspotted whiteness of thy virtue in my imagination, may hell-----'

Do not terrify me,' cries the, interrupting him, with fuch imprecations. O Mr. Booth, Mr. Booth, ' you must well know that a woman's virtue is always her fusficient guard. No husband, without suspecting that, can suspect any danger from those snares ' you mention. And why, if you are liable to take " fuch things into your head, may not your fuspicions fall on me, as well as on any other? for fure nothing was ever more unjust, I will not fay ungrateful, than the suspicions which you have bestowed on his · lordship. I do solemnly declare, in all the times I have feen the poor man, he bath never once offered the least forwardness. His behaviour hath been polite, indeed, but rather remarkably distant than 6 otherwise. Particularly when we played at cards toegether, I don't remember he speke ten words to me all the evening; and when I was at his house, though he shewed the greatest fondness imaginable to the children, he took to little notice of me, that a vain woman would have been very little pleased with him. And if he gave them many prefents, he never offered The first, indeed, which he ever offered me, was that which you in that kind manner forced me to " refuse.' All this may be only the effect of art, faid Booth.

I am convinced he doth, nay, I am convinced he must ' like you; and my good friend James, who perfectly well knows the world, told me, that his lordship's · character was that of the most profuse in his pleasures with women; nay, what faid Mrs. James this very evening? "His lordship is extremely generous----

" where he likes."

' I shall never forget the sneer with which she spoke

" those last words."

'I am convinced they injure him,' cries Amelia. As for Mrs. James, the was always given to be cenforious; I remarked it in her long ago as her greatest 6 fault.

fault. And as for the colonel, I believe he may find faults enow of this kind in his own bolom, without · fearthing after them among his neighbours. I am fure he hath the most impudent look of all the men I know; and I folemnly declare, the very last time he was here, he put me out of countenance more than once.'

' Colonel James,' answered Booth, 'may have his faults, very probable. I do not look upon him as a faint, nor do I believe he defires I flould; but what interest could he have in abusing this lord's character to me? Or why should I question his truth, when he affured me that my lord had never done an act of be-' neficence in his life, but for the fake of some woman

" whom he lufted after?"

es

m, th,

IVS

ct-

res ke

ns ng

ui,

nis I

red

-00

an

to-

me gh

hè

in

m.

ed

ne,

to

h.

ift

ly s'c

es ty

-

ke

a.

n-

.

' Then I myself can confute him,' replied Amelia: for befides his fervices to you, which, for the future, I shall wish to forget, and his kindness to my little babes, how inconfiftent is the character which James gives of him, with his lordship's behaviour to his own nephew and niece, whose extreme fondness of their uncle sufficiently proclaims his goodness to them! I need not mention all that I have heard from Mrs. Ellison, every word of which I believe; for I have great reason to think, notwithstanding some lit-' tle levity, which, to give her her due, she sees and condemns in herfelf, the is a very good fort of a wo-" man.

' Well, my dear,' cries Booth, 'I may have been deceived, and I heartily hope I am fo; but in reales of this nature, it is always good to be on the fuelt fide: for, as Congreve fays,

"The wife too jealous are: fools too fecure."

Here Amelia burst into tears; upon which Booth immediately caught her in his arms, and endeavoured to comfort her. Passion, however, for a while obstructed her speech, and at last she cried, 'O Mr. Booth, can I bear to hear the word Jealoufy from your " mouth!"

Why, my love,' faid Booth, 'will you fo fatally mifunderstand my meaning? How often shall I protest, that it is not of you, but of him that I was jealous? If you could look into my breast, and there

read all the most secret thoughts of my heart, you would not see one faint idea to your dishonour.

6 I don't missunderstand you, my dear,' said she,
6 so much as I am afraid you missunderstand yourself.
6 What is it you fear? You mention not force, but
6 sinares. Is not this to confess, at least, that you have
6 some doubt of my understanding? Do you then really
6 imagine me to be so weak as to be cheated of my vir-

tue? Am I to be deceived into an affection for a man, before I perceive the least inward hint of my danger? No, Mr. Booth; believe me, a woman must be a fool

indeed who can have in earnest such an excuse for her actions. I have not, I think, any very high opinion

of my judgment; but so far I shall rely upon it, that no man breathing could have any such designs as you have apprehended without my imprediately freing

have apprehended, without my immediately feeing them; and how I should then act, I hope my whole

conduct to you hath fufficiently declared.

'Well, my dear,' cries Booth, 'I beg you will mention it no more; if possible, forget it. I hope, nay I believe, I have been in the wrong; pray for-

give me.'

I will, I do forgive you, my dear,' faid she, 'if forgiveness be a proper word for one whom you have rather made miserable than angry; but let me entreat you to banish for ever all such suspicions from your mind. I hope Mrs. Ellison hath not discovered the real cause of your passion: but, poor woman! if she had, I am convinced it would go no farther. Oh,

his lordship's ears. You would lose the best friend that ever man had. Nay, I would not for his own

fake, poor man! for I really believe it would affect him greatly; and I must, I cannot help having an

esteem for so much goodness---an esteem which, by

this dear hand,' faid she, taking Booth's hand and kissing it, 'no man alive shall ever obtain by making love to me.'

Booth caught her in his arms, and tenderly embraced her; after which the reconciliation foon became compleat; and Booth, in the contemplation of his happiness, entirely buried all his jealous thoughts.

CHAP. VII.

A Chapter in which there is much Learning. THE next morning, whilft Booth was gone to take his morning-walk, Amelia went down into Mrs. Ellison's apartment, where though she was received with great civility, yet she found that lady was not at all pleased with Mr. Booth; and by some hint which dropt from her conversation, Amelia very greatly apprehended that Mrs. Ellison had too much suspicion of her husband's real uneasiness; for that lady declared very openly, she could not help perceiving what fort of man Mr. Booth was: 'And though I have the greatest regard for you, Madam, in the world, faid she, 'yet I think myfelf in honour obliged not to impose on his lordship, who, I know very well, hath conceived his greatest liking to the captain, on my telling him he was the best husband in the world.'

Amelia's fears gave her much disturbance, and when her husband returned, she acquainted him with them; upon which occasion, as it was natural, she resumed a little the topic of their former discourse; nor could she help casting, though in very gentle terms, some slight blame on Booth, for having entertained a suspicion, which, she said, might in it's consequence very possibly prove their ruin, and occasion the loss of his lordship's

friendship.

ly

0-

a-

re

ou

e,

f.

ut

ve ly

r-

n,

. 3

ol

er

n

at

m

g

le

11

e,

if

e

ıt

ľ

e

e

1,

h

d

n

Booth became highly affected with what his wife faid; and the more, as he had just received a note from Colonel James, informing him that the colonel had heard of a vacant company in the regiment which Booth had mentioned to him, and that he had been with his lordship about it, who had promised to use his utmost

intere

interest to obtain him the command. The poor man now exprest the utmost concern for his yesterday's behaviour; said, he believed the devil had taken possession of him; and concluded with crying out, Sure I was

born, my dearest creature, to be your torment? Amelia no sooner saw her husband's distress, than she instantly forbore whatever might seem likely to aggravate it, and applied herself, with all her power, to comfort him. 'It you will give me leave to offer my advice, my dearest soul,' said she, 'I think all might yet be remedied. I think you know me too well, to suspect that the desire of diversion should induce me to mention what I am now going to propose. And in that confidence, I will ask you to let me accept my lord's

confidence, I will alk you to let me accept my lord's
and Mrs. Ellison's offer, and to go to the masquerade.
No matter how little while I stay there: if you desire

it, I will not be an hour from you. I can make an hundred excuses to come home, or tell a real truth, and say I am tired with the place. The bare going

n

f

B

ir

will cure every thing.

Amelia had no fooner done speaking, than Booth immediately approved her advice, and readily gave his consent. He could not, however, help saying, that the shorter her stay was there, the more agreeable it would be to him: 'f for you know, my dear,' said he, 'I would never willingly be a moment out of your sight.'

In the afternoon Amelia fent to invite Mrs. Ellifon to a dish of tea, and Booth undertook to laugh off all that had past yesterday; in which attempt, the abundant good-humour of that lady gave him great hopes of

fucceis.

Mrs. Bennet came that afternoon to make a visit, and was almost an hour with Booth and Amelia, before

the entry of Mrs. Ellison.

Mr. Booth had hitherto rather difliked this young lady, and had wondered at the pleasure which Amelia declared she took in her company. This afternoon, however, he changed his opinion, and liked her almost

almost as much as his wife had done. She did, indeed, behave at this time with more than ordinary gaiety; and good-humour gave a glow to her countenance that fet off her features, which were very pretty, to the best advantage, and leffened the deadness that had usually appeared in her complexion.

But if Booth was now pleased with Mrs. Bennet, Amelia was still more pleased with her than ever; for when their discourse turned on love, Amelia discovered that her new friend had all the fame fentiments on that subject with herself. In the course of their conversation, Booth gave Mrs. Bennet a hint of wishing her a good husband; upon which, both the ladies declaimed against

fecond marriages with equal vehemence.

an

e-

on as

he

a-

ne,

be

th

nat

l's

e.

re

an

h;

g

th

is

at

it

e,

ır

m 11

1-

of

t,

e

r

Upon this occasion, Booth and his wife discovered a talent in their vifitant, to which they had been before entirely strangers, and for which they both greatly admired her; and this was, that the lady was a good scholar, in which indeed she had the advantage of poor Amelia, whose reading was confined to English plays and poetry; befides which, I think, the had converted only with the divinity of the great and learned Dr. Barrow, and with the histories of the excellent Bishop Burnet.

Amelia delivered herfelf on the subject of second marriages with much eloquence and great good fense; but when Mrs. Bennet came to give her opinion, the spoke in the following manner: 'I shall not enter into the question concerning the legality of bigamy. Our ' laws certainly allow it, and fo, I think, doth our re-' ligion. We are now debating only on the decency of 'it; and in this light, I own myself as strenuous an advocate against it, as any Roman matron would have been in those ages of the common wealth, when it was held to be infamous. For my own part, how great a paradox foever my opinion may feem, I folemnly declare, I fee but little difference between ha-' ving two husbands at one time, and at several times; and of this I am very confident, that the same degree of

I love for a first husband, which preserves a woman in the one case, will preserve her in the other. There

is one argument which I scarce know how to deliver before you, Sir; but---if a woman hath lived with

her first husband without having children, I think it unpardonable in her to carry barrenness into a second

family. On the contrary, if she hath children by her first husband, to give them a second father is still

· more unpardonable.'

' But suppose, Madam,' cries Booth, interrupting her, with a smile, ' she should have had children by her

first husband, and have lost them?" ' That is a case,' answered she, with a sigh, 'which I did not defire to think of; and I must own it the · most favourable light in which a second marriage can be feen. But the Scriptures, as Petrarch observes, ' rather fuffer them than commend them; and St. Je-· rome speaks against them with the utmost bitterness.' --- I remember,' cries Booth, (who was willing either to flew his learning, or to draw out the lady's) 'a very wife law of Charondas, the famous lawgiver of Thurium, by which men who married a fecond time were removed from all public councils; for it was scarce reasonable to suppose, that he who was so great a · fool in his own family, should be wife in public affairs. · And though second marriages were permitted among the Romans, yet they were at the same time discouraged; and those Roman widows who refused them, were held in high-efteem, and honoured-with what Valerius Maximus calls the Corona Pudicitiæ. In the noble family of Camilli, there was not, in many ages, a fingle instance of this, which Martial calls

adultery:
 Que toties nubit, non nubit; adultera lege est.

True, Sir,' fays Mrs. Bennet; and Virgil calls this a violation of chastity, and makes Dido speak of it with the utmost detestation;

· Sed mili vel Tellus optem prius ima debiscat!

· Vel pater omnifotens adigat me fulmine ad umbras.
· Pallentes

· Pallentes umbras Erebi, noctemque profundam, · Ante, pudor, quam te violo, aut tua jura refolvo.

· Ille meos, primum qui me fibi iunxit, amores, · Ille babeat semper secum sera eique seguichro."

in

re

rer

th

it

nd

by

ill

ng

cr

ch

he

an

es,

le-

s.'

ner

ry

11-

ere

ce

a

rs.

ng

if-

fed

ith

æ. ny

lls

lls

of

50

She repeated these lines with to strong an emphasis, that the almost frightened Amelia out of her wits, and not a little staggered Booth, who was himself no contemptible scholar. He expressed great admiration of the lady's learning; upon which the faid, it was all the fortune given her by her tather, and all the dower left her by her husband: ' And iometimes,' faid she, ' I am inclined to think I enjoy more pleasure from it, than if they had bestowed on me what the world ' would in general call more valuable.' She then took occasion, from the surprize which Booth had affected to conceive at her repeating Latin with to good a grace, to comment on that great abfurdity (for to the termed it) of excluding women from learning; for which they were equally qualified with the men, and in which to many had made to notable a proficiency; for a proof of which the mentioned Madam Dacier, and many others.

Though both Booth and Amelia outwardly concurred with her fentiments, it may be a question whether they did not affent rather out of complainance than from their real judgment.

CHAP.

Containing some unaccountable Behaviour in Mrs. Ellison. MRS. Ellison made her entrance at the end of the preceeding discourse. At her first appearance she put on an unufual degree of formality and referve; but when Amelia had acquainted her that the deligned to accept the favour intended her, the foon began to alter the gravity of her mutcles, and presently fell in with that ridicule which Booth thought proper to throw on his yesterday's behaviour.

The convertation now became very lively and pleafant; in which Booth having mentioned the ducourfe that passed in the last chapter, and having greatly com;

VOL. II. H plimented plimented Mrs. Bennet's speech on that occasion, Mrs. Ellison, who was as strenuous an advocate on the other side, began to railly that lady extremely, declaring it was a certain sign she intended to marry again soon.

Married ladies,' cries she, I believe, sometimes think themselves in earnest in such declarations,

though they are oftener, perhaps, meant as compli ments to their husbands; but when widows exclaim

· loudly against second marriages, I would always lay a wager, that the man, if not the wedding-day, is

absolutely fixed on.

Mrs. Bennet made very little answer to this farcasm. Indeed, she had scarce opened her lips from the time of Mrs. Ellison's coming into the room, and had grown particularly grave at the mention of the masquerade. Amelia imputed this to her being left out of the party, a matter which is often no small mortification to human pride; and, in a whisper, asked Mrs. Ellison if she could not procure a third ticket; to which she received

an absolute negative.

During the whole time of Mrs. Bennet's stay, which was above an hour afterwards, she remained perfectly silent, and looked extremely melancholy. This made Amelia very uneasy, as she concluded she had guessed the cause of her vexation; in which opinion she was the more confirmed, from certain looks of no very pleasant kind which Mrs. Bennet now and then cast on Mrs. Ellison, and the more than ordinary concern that appeared in the former lady's countenance, whenever the masquerade was mentioned, and which unfortunately was the principal topic of their discourse; for Mrs. Ellison gave a very elaborate description of the extreme beauty of the place, and elegance of the diversion.

When Mrs. Bennet was departed, Amelia could not help again foliciting Mrs. Ellison for another ticket, declaring she was certain Mrs. Bennet had a great inclination to go with them; but Mrs. Ellison again excused herself from asking it of his lordship. 'Besides, 'Madam, says she, 'if I would go thither with Mrs.

Bennet,

Bennet, which, I own to you, I don't chuse, as she is a person whom nobody knows, I very much doubt

whether she herself would like it; for the is a woman

of a very unaccountable turn. All her delight lies in books; and as for public diversions, I have often

heard her declare her abhorrence of them."

'What then,' faid Amelia, 'could occasion all that gravity, from the moment the masquerade was menf tioned?

' As to that,' answered the other, 'there is no guesfing. You have feen her altogether as grave before o now. She hath had these fits of gravity at times ever

' fince the death of her husband.'

' Poor creature!' cries Amelia; ' I heartily pity her; for the must certainly suffer a great deal on these occasions. I declare I have taken a strange fancy to

" her."

n

e

1

d

e

t

.

-

e

y

.

le

t

t, 1-

(-

S,

Sas

' Perhaps you would not like her fo well if you knew her thoroughly, answered Mrs. Ellison. She is, upon the whole, but of a whimfical temper; and,

if you will take my opinion, you should not cultivate too much intimacy with her. I know you will ne-

ver mention what I fay; but she is like some pictures,

' which please best at a distance.'

Amelia did not feem to agree with thefe fentiments, and the greatly importuned Mrs. Ellifon to be more explicit, but to no purpose: she continued to give only dark hints to Mrs. Bennet's disadvantage; and if ever the let drop fomething a little too harsh, the failed not immediately to contradict herself, by throwing some gentle commendations into the other scale; so that her conduct appeared utterly unaccountable to Amelia; and, upon the whole, she knew not whether to conclude Mrs. Ellifon to be a friend or enemy to Mrs.

During this latter conversation, Booth was not in the room: for he had been summoned down stairs by the ferjeant, who came to him with news from Murphy, whom he had met that evening, and who affured the ferjeant,

series, that if he was desirous of recovering the debt which he had before pretended to have on Booth, he might shortly have an opportunity; for that there was to be a very strong petition to the board the next time they sat. Murphy said farther, that he need not fear having his money; for that to his certain knowledge the captain had several things of great value, and even

his children had gold watches.

This greatly alarmed Booth; and still more, when the serjeant reported to him from Murphy, that all these things had been seen in his possession within a day last past. He now plainly perceived, as he thought, that Murphy himself, or one of his emissaries, had been the supposed madman; and he now very well accounted to himself, in his own mind, for all that had happened, conceiving that the design was to examine into the state of his effects, and to try whether it was worth his cre-

ditors while to plunder him by law.

At his return to his apartment; he communicated what he had heard to Amelia and Mrs. Ellison, not difguising his apprehensions of the enemy's intentions; but Mrs. Ellison endeavoured to laugh him out of his fears, calling him faint-hearted, and affuring him he might depend on her lawyer. 'Till you hear from him,' iaid 'she, 'you may rest entirely contented; for take my 'word for it, no danger can happen to you, of which 'you will not be timely apprized by him. And as for the fellow that had the impudence to come into your room, if he was sent on such an errand as you mention, I heartily wish I had been at home; I would have fecured him safe with a constable, and have carried him directly before Justice Thrasher. I know the justice is an enemy to bailists on his own account.'

This heartening speech a little rouzed the courage of Booth, and somewhat comforted Amelia; though the spirits of both had been too much hurried, to suffer either of them to give or receive much entertainment that evening; which Mrs. Ellison perceiving, soon took her leave, and left this unhappy couple to seek relief

from

from fleep, that powerful friend to the diffrested; though, like other powerful friends, he is not always ready to give his affiltance to those that want it most.

CHAP. IX.

Containing a very frange Incident.

WHEN the husband and wife were alone, they again talked over the news which the ferjeant had brought; on which occasion Amelia did all she could to conceal her own fears, and to quiet those of her husband. At last she turned the conversation to another fubject, and poor Mrs. Bennet was brought on the carpet. 'I should be forry,' cries Amelia, ' to find "I had conceived an affection for a bad woman; and 'yet I begin to fear Mrs. Ellison knows something of her more than she cares to discover; why else ' should she be unwilling to be seen with her in pub-'lic? Besides, I have observed that Mrs. Ellison hath been bockward to introduce her to me, nor would ever bring her to my apartment, though I have of-' ten desired her. Nay, she hath given me frequent hints ' not to cultivate the acquaintance. What do you ' think, my dear? I should be very forry to contract an ' intimacy with a wicked person.'

' Nay, my dear,' cries Booth, ' I know no more of her, nor indeed hardly so much as yourself. But this I think, that if Mrs. Ellison knows any reason ' why she should not have introduced Mrs. Bennet into ' your company, the was very much in the wrong in

' introducing her into it.'

0

In discourses of this kind they past the remainder of the evening. In the morning Booth rofe early, and going down stairs, received from little Betty a sealed note, which contained the following words---

"Beware, beware!

" For I apprehend a dreadful fnare

" Is laid for virtuous innocence, " Under a friend's false pretence."

Booth immediately enquired of the girl who brought H 3 this

this note, and was told it came by a chairman, who, having delivered it, departed without faying a word.

He was extremely staggered at what he read, and presently referred the advice to the same affair on which he had received those hints from Atkinson the preceding evening; but when he came to consider the words more maturely, he could not so well reconcile the two last lines of this poetical epistle, if it may be so called, with any danger which the law gave him reason to apprehend. Mr. Murphy and his gang could not be well said to attack his innocence or virtue; nor did they attack him under any colour or pretence of friendship.

After much deliberation on this matter, a very ftrange fulpicion came into his head; and this was, that he was betrayed by Mrs. Ellifon. He had for fome time conceived no very high opinion of that good gentlewoman, and he now began to suspect that she was bribed to betray him. By this means he thought he could best account for the strange appearance of the supposed madman. And when this conceit once had birth in his mind, several circumstances nourished and improved it. Among these were her jocose behaviour and raillery on that occasion, and her attempt to ridicule his fears from the message which the serjeant had brought him.

This suspicion was indeed preposterous, and not at all warranted by, or even consistent with, the character and whole behaviour of Mrs. Ellison; but it was the only one which at that time suggested itself to his mind, and however blameable it might be, it was certainly not unnatural in him to entertain it: for so great a torment is anxiety to the human mind, that we always endeavour to relieve ourselves from it by guesses, however doubtful or uncertain; on all which occasions, dislike and hatred are the surest guides to lead our suspicion to

its object.

When Amelia rose to breakfast, Booth produced the note which he had received, saying, My dear, you have so often blamed me for keeping secrets from

vou, and I have so often, indeed, endeavoured to conceal fecrets of this kind from you with fuch ill fuccess, that I think I shall never more attempt it. Amelia read the letter hastily, and seemed not a little discomposed; then turning to Booth with a very disconsolate countenance, the said, ' Sure Fortune takes a delight in terrifying us! What can be the meaning of this?' Then fixing her eyes attentively on the paper, the perused it for some time, till Booth cried, 'How is it possible, my Emily, you can read such stuff patiently? The veries are certainly as bad as ever were written.'--- I am trying, my dear,' answered she, to recoilect the hand; for I will take my oath I have ' feen it before, and that very lately;' and fuddenly fhe cried out with great emotion, ' I remember it perfeetly now; it is Mrs. Bennet's hand. Mrs. Ellison ' shewed me a letter from her but a day or two ago. ' It is a very remarkable hand, and I am positive it is her's.'

'If it be her's,' cries Booth, 'what can she possibly mean by the latter part of her caution? Sure,

" Mrs. Ellison hath no intention to betray us?"

'I know not what she means,' answered Amelia; but I am resolved to know immediately, for I am certain of the hand. By the greatest luck in the world, she told me yesterday where her lodgings were, when she presed me exceedingly to come and fee her. She lives but a very few doors from us, and I will go to her this moment.'

Booth made not the least objection to his wife's defign. His curiofity was indeed as great as her's, and so was his impatience to satisfy it, though he mentioned not this impatience to Amelia; and perhaps it

had been well for him if he had.

0

Amelia, therefore, prefently equipped herself in her walking dress, and leaving her children to the care of her husband, made all possible haste to Mrs. Bennet's lodgings.

Amelia waited near five minutes at Mrs. Bennet's

door before any one came to open it; at length a maid-fervant appeared, who being asked if Mrs. Bennet was at home, answered with some confusion in her counterance, that she did not know: 'But, Madam,' says she, if you will send up your name, I will go and see.' Amelia then told her name; and the wench, after staying a considerable time, returned and acquainted her that Mrs. Bennet was at home. She was then ushered into a parlour, and told that the lady would wait on her presently.

In this parlour Amelia cooled her heels, as the phrase is, near a quarter of an hour. She seemed indeed at this time in the miserable situation of one of those poor wretches who make their morning visits to the great to solicit favours, or perhaps to solicit the payment of a debt; for both are alike treated as beggars, and the latter sometimes considered as the more

troublesome beggars of the two.

During her stay here, Amelia observed the house to be in great confusion; a great bustle was heard above stairs, and the maid ran up and down several times in

a great hurry.

At length Mrs. Bennet herself came in. She was greatly disordered in her looks, and had, as the women call it, huddled on her clothes in much haste; for in truth, she was in bed when Amelia first came. Of this fact she informed her, as the only apology she could make for having caused her to wait so long for

her company.

Amelia very readily accepted her apology, but asked her with a simile, if these early hours were usual with her? Mrs. Bennet turned as red as scarlet at the question, and answered, 'No, indeed, dear Madam, I am, 'for the most part, a very early riser; but I happened accidentally to sit up very late last night. I am sure, 'I had little expectation of your intending such a fat your this morning.'

Amelia, looking very stedfastly at her, said, 'Is it possible, Madam, you should think such a note as 'this

this would raise no curiosity in me?' She then gave her the note, asking her if she did not know the hand.

Mrs. Bennet appeared in the utmost surprize and confusion at this instant. Indeed, if Amelia had conceived but the slightest suspicion before, the behaviour of the lady would have been a sufficient confirmation to her of the truth. She waited not, therefore, for an answer: which, indeed, the other seemed in no haste to give, but conjured her in the most earnest manner to explain to her the meaning of so extraordinary an act of friendship: 'For so,' said she, 'I esteem it; being 'convinced you must have sufficient reason for the warning you have given me.'

Mrs. Bennet, after some hesitation, answered, I need not, I believe, tell you how much I am surprized at what you have shewn me; and the chief reason of my surprize is, how you came to discover my hand. Sure, Madam, you have not shewn it to

'Mrs. Ellison.'

d-

as

e-

ys ...

y-

er

ed

n

10

1-

of

to

·e

0

9

11

S

ľ

Amelia declared she had not, but defired she would question her no farther. What signifies how I disco-

' vered it, fince your hand it certainly is?'

firits; 'and fince you have not shewn it to that woman, I am satisfied. I begin to guess now whence
you might have your information: but no matter; I
wish I had never done any thing of which I ought to
be more ashamed. No one can, I think, justiv accuse me of a crime on that account; and I thank
Heaven, my shame will never be directed by the sale
opinion of the world. Perhaps it was wrong to shew
my letter; but when I consider all circumstances, I
can forgive it.'

'Since you have guessed the truth,' said Amelia,
'I am not obliged to deny it. She, indeed, shewed
'me your letter; but I am sure you have not the least
'reason to be ashamed of it. On the contrary, your
'behaviour on so melancholy an occasion was highly

praise-worthy; and your bearing up under such afflic-

tions, as the lofs of a husband in so dreadful a fituation, was truly great and heroical.

So Mrs. Ellifon, then, hath shewn you my letter?

cries Mrs. Bennet, eagerly.

Why, did not you guess it yourself? answered Amelia; otherwise I am sure I have betrayed my homour in mentioning it. I hope you have not drawn me inadvertently into any breach of my promise.

- me inadvertently into any breach of my promife.
 Did you not affert, and that with an absolute cer-
- tainty, that you knew the had thewn me your letter, and that you was not angry with her for fo doing?
- 'I am to confused,' replied Mrs. Bennet, 'that I farce know what I say; yes, yes, I remember I did fay so. I wish I had no greater reason to be angry

with her than that.'

For Heaven's sake,' cries Amelia, 'do not delay my request any longer. What you say now greatly increases my curiosity; and my mind will be on the

increases my curiouty; and my mind will be on the rack till you discover your whole meaning: for I am

more and more convinced, that lomething of the utmost importance was the purport of your message.'

Gof the utmost importance indeed, cries Mrs. Bennet; at least you will own my apprehensions were fusficiently well founded. O gracious Heaven, how

happy shall I think myself, if I should have proved your preservation! I will, i deed, explain my man-

ing; but in order to disclose all my fears in their just colours, I must unfold my whole history to you.

Can you have patience, Madam, to liften to the ftory

of the most unfortunate of women?'

Amelia affured her of the highest attention; and Mrs. Bennet soon after began to relate what is written in the seventh book of this history.

Mrs.

BOOK VII.

1-

3,

d

'n

e.

r-

r,

d

y

y

y

n

e

d

t

y

CHAP. I.

A very short Chapter, and consequently requiring no Preface.

MRS. Bennet having faffened the door, and both the ladies having taken their places, she once or twice offered to speak, when passion stopt her utterance; and after a minute's silence, she burst into a flood of tears; upon which, Amelia expressing the utmost tenderness for her, as well by her look as by her accent, cried, 'What can be the reason, dear Madam, of all this 'emotion?'---'OMrs. Booth,' answered she, 'I find I have undertaken what I am not able to perform. You would not wonder at my emotion, if you knew 'you had an adulteress and a murderer now standing 'before you.'

Amelia turned as pale as death at these words; which Mrs. Bennet observing, collected all the force she was able, and a little composing her countenance, cried, ' I fee, Madam, I have terrified you with fuch dreadful ' words; but I hope you will not think me guilty of 'these crimes in the blackest degree.'---- Guilty!' cries Amelia, 'O heavens!'---- I believe, indeed, 'your candour,' continued Mrs. Bennet, 'will be readier to acquit me than I am to acquit myself. In discretion, at least, the highest, most unpardonable ' indifcretion, I shall always lay to my own charge; and when I reflect on the fatal consequences, I can ' never, never forgive myseif.' Here she again began to lament in fo bitter a manner, that Amelia endeavoured, as much as the could (for the was herfelf greatly shocked) to soothe and comfort her; telling her, that if indifcretion was her highest crime, the unhappy confequences made her rather an unfortunate than a guilty person; and concluded by saying, ' Indeed, Madam, you have raifed my curiofity to the highest pitch, and · I beg you will proceed with your story.'

Mrs. Bennet feemed a fecond time going to begin her relation, when she cried out, 'I would, if possible, 'tire you with no more of my unfortunate life, than

int with that part which leads to a catastrophe in

which I think you may yourfelf be interested; but I ' protest I am at a loss where to begin.' Begin wherever you please, dear Madam, cries Amelia; 'but I beg you will confider my impatience.' --- I do confider it, answered Mrs. Bennet; and ' therefore would begin with that part of my fory which leads directly to what concerns yourself: for how, indeed, should my life produce any thing worthy your notice!'--- Do not fay fo, Madam,' cries Amelia. ' I affure you I have long fuspected there were fome very remarkable incidents in your life, and have only waited an opportunity to impart to you my defire of hearing them: I beg, therefore, you would ' make no more apologies.'--- I will not, Madam,' cries Mrs. Bennet, and yet I would avoid any thing trivial; though, indeed, in stories of distress, especially where love is concerned, many little incidents may appear trivial to those who have never felt the paffion, which to delicate minds are the most interesting part of the whole.' --- Nay, but, dear Madam, cries Amelia, this is all preface.

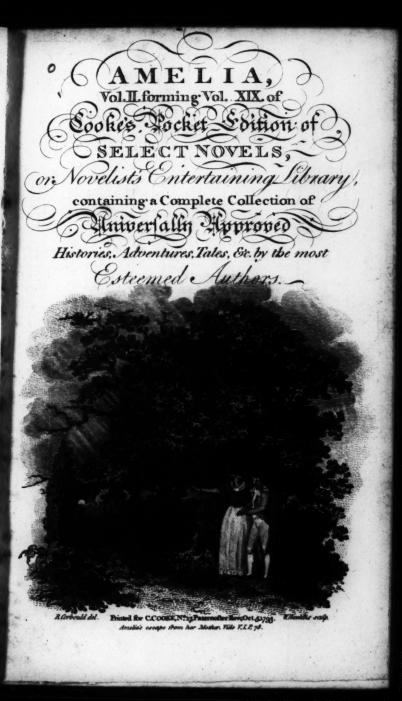
Well, Madam,' answered Mrs. Bennet, ' I will' consider your impatience.' She then rallied all her spirits in the best manner she could, and began as is

written the next chapter.

And here possibly the reader will blame Mrs. Bennet for taking her story so far back, and relating so much of her life in which Amelia had no concern; but in truth, she was desirous of inculcating a good opinion of herself, from recounting those transactions where her conduct was unexceptionable, before she came to the more dangerous and suspicious part of her character. This I really suppose to have been her intention; for to facrifice the time and patience of Amelia, at such a season, to the mere love of talking of herself, would

ľ n n s.dyr-sedyd; s-se 11 r - o it i- is ie i- i-





17427.440.20

THE GIFT OF
FRIENDS OF THE LIBRARY
FEB 4 1926

would have been as unpardonable in her, as the bearing it was in Amelia a proof of the most perfect good-breeding.

CHAP. II.

The Beginning of Mrs. Bennet's History.

'I WAS the younger of two daughters of a clergyman in Essex; of one in whose praise if I should indulge my fond heart in speaking, I think my invention could not outgo the reality. He was, indeed, well worthy of the cloth he wore; and that, I think, is the highest character a man can obtain.

the highest character a man can obtain.

During the first part of my life, even till I reached my sixteenth year, I can recollect nothing to relate to you. All was one long serene day; in looking back upon which, as when we cast our eyes upon a calm sea, no object arises to my view. All appears one scene of happiness and tranquillity.

On the day, then, when I became fixteen years old, must I begin my history; for on that day I

· first tasted the bitterness of forrow.

'My father, besides those prescribed by our religion, kept five sestivals every year. These were on his wedding-day, and on the birth-day of each of his little family. On these occasions he used to invite two or three neighbours to his house, and to indulge himself, as he said, in great excess, for so he called drinking a pint of very small punch; and, indeed, it might appear excess to one who on other days rarely tasted any liquor stronger than small-beer.

'Upon my unfortunate birth-day, then, when we were all in a high degree of mirth, my mother having left the room after dinner, and staying away pretty long, my father sent me to see for her. I went according to his orders; but though I searched the whole house, and called after her without doors, I could neither see nor hear her. I was a little alarmed at this (though far from suspecting any great mischief had befallen her) and ran back to acquaint my father, who answered coolly (for he was a man of the Vol. II. 39.

calmest temper) " Very well, my dear, I suppose " fhe is not gone far, and will be here immediately." · Half an hour or more past after this, when, she not returning, my father himself expressed some surprize at her flay; declaring, it must be some matter of imoportance which could detain her at that time from her company. His furprize now increased every minute; and he began to grow uneafy, and to shew sufficient fymptoms of what he felt within. He then dispatched the fervant maid to enquire after her mistress in the parish; but waited not her return; for the was scarce gone out of doors, before he begged leave of his guests to go himself on the same errand. The company now broke up, and attended my father, all endeavouring to give him hopes that no mischief had happpened. They fearched the whole parish, but in vain: they could e neither fee my mother, nor hear any news of her. My father returned home in a state little short of distraction. His friends in vain attempted to admi-· nister either advice or comfort; he threw himself on

· the floor in the most bitter agonies of despair. Whilst he lay in this condition, my fister and my-· felf lying by him, all equally, I believe, and come pletely miferable, our old fervant came into the room, and cried out, her mind mifgave her, that the knew where her mistress was. Upon these words, my father forung from the floor, and asked her ea-' gerly, "Where?" But, Oh! Mrs. Booth, how can · I describe the particulars of a scene to you, the re-· membrance of which chills my blood with horror, and which the agonies of my mind, when it past, made all all a scene of confusion! The fact, then, in short, was this: my mother, who was a most indulgent ' mistress to one servant, which was all we kept, was unwilling, I suppose, to disturb her at her dinner; and therefore went herfelf to fill her tea-kettle at a well, into which, stretching herself too far, as we imagine, the water then being very low, the fell with

the tea-kettle in her hand. The missing this, gave the poor old wretch the first hint of her suspicion, which, upon examination, was found to be too well

grounded.

What we all suffered on this occasion may more eafily be felt than described.'--- It may indeed,' anfwered Amelia; and I am so sensible of it, that unless you have a mind to see me faint before your face, I beg you will order me fomething; a glass of water, if you please.' Mrs. Bennet immediately complied with her friend's request: a glass of water was brought, and some hartshorn drops infused into it; which Amelia having drank off, declared the found herfelf much

better; and then Mrs. Bennet proceeded thus: I will not dwell on a scene which I see hath already fo much affected your tender heart, and which is as disagreeable to me to relate, as it can be to you to hear. I will, therefore, only mention to you the be-· haviour of my father upon this occasion, which was indeed becoming a philosopher and a christian divine. On the day after my mother's funeral, he ient for my fifter and myself into his room; where, after many careffes, and every demonstration of fatherly tendere ness, as well in silence as i words, he began to exhort us to bear with patience the great calamity that had befallen us; faying, that as every human accident, how terrible foever, must happen to us by divine permission at least, a due sense of our duty to our great Creator must teach us an absolute submission to his will. Not only religion, but common fense, must teach us this; " for, oh! my dear children," cries he, " how vain is all relitance, all repining! Could tears wash back again my angel from the grave, I " should drain all the juices of my body through my ee eyes; but oh! could we fill up that curfed well with our tears, how fruitless would be all our forrow!" I think I repeat you his very words; for the impreffion they made on me is never to be obliterated. He then proceeded to comfort us with the chearful

I 2

96

thought that the lots was entirely our own, and that my mother was greatly a gainer by the accident " which we lamented. " I have a wife," cries he, " my children, and you have a mother now amongst " the heavenly choir : how telfish, therefore, is all our " grief! how cruel to her are all our wishes!" In this manner he talked to us near half an hour, though I must frankly own to you, his arguments had not the immediate good effect on us which they deferred; for we retired from him very little the better for his exhortations. However, they became every day more and more forcible upon our recollection: indeed, they were greatly strengthened by his example; for in this, as in all other instances, he practifed the doctrines which he taught. From this day he never mentioned my mother more, and foon after recovered his ufual chearfulness in public; though I have reason to think he paid many a bitter figh in private to that remembrance, which neither philotophy nor christianity could expunge.

' My father's advice, enforced by his example, together with the kindness of some of our friends, assisted by that abiest of all the mental physicians, Time, in a few months pretty well restored my tranquillity, when Fortune made a fecond attack on my quiet. ' My fifter, whom I dearly loved, and who as warmly returned my affection, had fallen into an ill state of health some time before the fatal accident which I have related. She was, indeed, at that time fo much better, that we had great hopes of her perfect recovery; but the diforder of her mind on that dreadful occasion io affected her body, that she presently re-· lapsed into her former declining state, and thence grew continually worse and worse, till after a decay of near feven months, she followed my poor mother to the

grave.

'I will not tire you, dear Madam, with repetitions of grief; I will only mention two observations which have occurred to me from reflections on the two loffes

I have mentioned. The first is, that a mind once violently hurt, grows, as it were, callous to any future
impressions of grief; and is never capable of feeling
the same pangs a second time. The other observation is, that the arrows of fortune, as well as all
others, derive their force from the velocity with which
they are discharged; for when they approach you by
slow and perceptible degrees, they have but very little
power to do you mischief.

The truth of these observations I experienced, not only in my own heart, but in the behaviour of my father, whose philosophy seemed to gain a complete

triumph over this latter calamity.

Our family was now reduced to two; and my father grew extremely fond of me, as if he had now conferred an entire stock of affection on me, that had before been divided. His words, indeed, testified ono less; for he daily called me his only darling, his whole comfort, his all. He committed the whole charge of his house to my care, and gave me the name of his little house-keeper, an appellation of which I was then as proud as any minister of state can be of his titles. But though I was very industrious in the discharge of my occupation, I did not, however, neg-· lest my studies, in which I had made so great a pro-· ficiency, that I was become a pretty good miltress of the Latin language, and had made fome progress in the Greek. I believe, Madam, I have formerly acquainted you, that learning was the chief estate I cinherited of my father, in which he had instructed me from my earliest youth.

The kindness of this good man had at length wiped off the remembrance of all losses; and I, during two years, led a life of great tranquillity, I

think I might almost say, of perfect happiness.

' I was now in the nineteenth year of my age, when my father's good fortune removed us from the county of Essex into Hampshire, where a living was conferred

on him by one of his old school-fellows, of twice the

value of what he was before polleffed of.

His predecessor in this new living had died in very
indifferent circumstances, and had left behind him a
widow with two small children. My father, therefore, who, with great occonomy, had a most generous
foul, bought the whole furniture of the parsonagehouse at a very high price: some of it, indeed, he
would have wanted; for though our little habitation
in Essex was most completely furnished, yet it bore no

proportion to the largeness of that house in which he

was now to dwell.

His motive, however, to the purchase was, I am convinced, solely generosity; which appeared sufficiently by the price he gave, and may be farther inforced by the kindness he shewed the widow in another instance: for he assigned her an apartment for the use of herself and her little family; which, he told her, she was welcome to enjoy as long as it suited her conveniency.

As this widow was very young, and generally thought to be tolerably pretty, though I own she had a cast with her eyes which I never liked, my father, you may suppose, acted from a less noble principle than I have hinted: but I must in justice acquit him; for these kind offers were made her before ever he had seen her face; and I have the greatest reason to think, that, for a long time after he had seen her,

he beheld her with much indifference.

This act of my father's gave me, when I first heard it, great satisfaction; for I may, at least with the modesty of the ancient philosophers, call myself a logical ver of generosity: but when I became acquainted with the widow, I was still more delighted with what my father had done; for though I could not agree with those who thought her a consummate beauty, I must allow that she was very fully possessed of the power of making herself agreeable; and this power she exerted with so much success, with such

indefatigable industry to oblige, that within three months I became in the highest manner pleased with my new acquaintance, and had contracted the most

fincere friendihip for her.

But if I was to pleased with the widow, my father was by this time enamoured of her. She had, indeed, by the most artful conduct in the world, so infinuated herself into his favour, so entirely infatuated him, that he never shewed the least marks of chearfulness in her absence, and could, in truth, scarce bear that

fhe should be out of his fight.

She had managed this matter fo well, (O fhe is the most artful of women!) my father's heart was gone before I ever suspected it was in danger. The difcovery, you may easily believe, Madam, was not e pleasing. The name of a mother-in-law founded dreadful in my ears, nor could I bear the thought of parting again with a share in those dear affections, of which I had purchased the whole by the loss of a be-· loved mother and fifter.

In the first hurry and disorder of my mind on this coccasion, I committed a crime of the highest kind against all the laws of prudence and discretion. took the young lady herfelf very roundly to talk; treated her defigns on my father as little better than a defign to commit a theft; and in my passion, I be-· lieve, faid the might be ashamed to think of marrying a man old enough to be her grandfather; for so in

reality he almost was.

"The lady on this occasion acted finely the part of a hypocrite. She affected to be highly affronted at my unjust suspicions, as she called them, and proceeded to fuch affeverations of her innocence, that she almost brought me to discredit the evidence of my own eyes

f and ars.

' My father, however, acted much more honeftly; for he fell the next day into a more violent passion with me than I had ever feen him in before, and asked me, whether I intended to return his paternal fondness,

by affuming the right of controlling his inclinations: with more of the like kind; which fully convinced me what had passed between him and the lady, and

how little I had injured her in my fuspicions. · Hitherto, I frankly own, my aversion to this match had been principally on my own account; for I had no ' ill opinion of the woman; though I thought neither her circumstances, nor my father's age, promised any kind of felicity from such an union: but now I · learned some particulars, which had not our quarrel become publick in the parish, I should, perhaps, have e never known. In thort, I was informed, that this egentle, obliging creature, as the had first appeared to me, had the spirit of a tigre's, and was by many be-

· lieved to have broken the heart of her first husband. ' The truth of this matter being confirmed to me upon examination, I resolved not to suppress it. On this occasion fortune seemed to favour me, by giving " me a speedy opportunity of seeing my father alone, and in good humour. He now first began to oper his intended marriage, telling me that he had formerly had fome religio s objections to bigamy, but he had very fully confidered the matter, and had fatisfied himself of its legality. He then faithfully promised · me, that no fecond marriage should in the least impair his affection for me; and concluded with the highest eulogiums on the goodness of the widow, protesting that it was her virtues, and not her person,

with which he was enamoured.

· I now fell upon my knees before him, and bathing his hand in my tears, which flowed very plentifully from my eyes, acquainted him with all I had heard; and was fo very imprudent, I might also say so cruel, as to disclose the author of my information.

' My father heard me without any indication of paffion; and answered coldly, that if there was any proof of fuch facts, he should decline any farther thoughts of this match. "But child," faid he, "though I

"as far as regards your knowledge; yet you know the inclination of the world to flander." 'However, before we parted, he promited to make a proper enquiry into what I had told him.---But I afk your pardon, dear Madam; I am running minutely into those particulars of my life, in which you have not the least concern.'

Amelia stopped her friend short in her apology; and though, perhaps, she thought her impertinent enough, yet (such was her good breeding) she gave her many assurances of a curiosity to know every incident of her

Bennet proceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. III.

life which she could remember. After which, Mrs.

Continuation of Mrs. Bennet's Story.

Think, Madam,' faid Mrs. Bennet, 'I told you 'my father promifed me to enquire farther into the affair: but he had hardly time to keep his word, for we separated pretty late in the evening, and early the next morning he was married to the widow.

'But though he gave no credit to my information,
'I had fufficient reason to think he did not forget it,
by the resentment which he soon discovered to both
the persons whom I had named as my informers.

'Nor was it long before I had good cau e to believe that my father's new wife was perfectly well acquainted with the good opinion I had of her, not only from her usage of me, but from certain hints which she threw forth with an air of triumph. One day, particularly, I remember she said to my father, upon his mentioning his age---"O, my dear, I hope you have many years yet to live; unless, indeed, I should be so cruel as to break your heart!" She spoke these words, looking me full in the face, and accompanied them with a sneer, in which the highest malice was visible, under a thin covering of affected pl. asantry.

I will not entertain you, Madam, with any thing fo common as the cruel usage of a step-mother; nor of

what affected me much more, the unkind behaviour of a father under fuch an influence. It shall suffice only

to tell you, that I had the mortification to perceive the gradual and daily decrease of my father's affec-

tion. His fimiles were converted into frowns; the tender appellations of child, and dear, were exchanged

for plain Molly, that girl, that creature, and fometimes much harder names. I was at first turned all

at once into a cypher, and at last seemed to be consi-

dered as a nuisance in the family.

'Thus altered was the man of whom I gave you fuch a character at the entrance of my story; but, alas! he no longer acted from his own excellent difposition; but was in every thing governed and directed by my mother-in-law. In fact, whenever there is great disparity of years between husband and wife, the younger is, I believe, always possessed of absolute power over the elder: for superstition itself is a less firm support of absolute power than dotage.

But though his wife was fo entirely mistress of my father's will, that the could make him use me ill, fhe could not so perfectly subdue his understanding, as to prevent him from being conscious of such ill ulage; and from this consciousness he began invete-

rately to hate me. Of this hatred he gave me numberless instances; and I protest to you, I know not

any other reason for it than what I have assigned;

and the cause, as experience hath convinced me, is

· adequate to the effect.

While I was in this wretched fituation, my father's unkindness having almost broken my heart, he came one day into my room with more anger in his countenance than I had ever feen; and after bitterly upbraiding me with my undutiful behaviour, both to

himself and his worthy consort, he bid me pack up my alls, and immediately prepare to quit his house;

f at the same time gave me a letter, and told me, that would acquaint me where I might find a home; adding,

that he doubted not but I expected, and had indeed. folicited,

folicited, the invitation; and left me with a declararation that he would have no fpies in his family.

The letter I found, on opening it, was from my father's own fifter: but before I mention the contents, I will give you a short sketch of her character, as it was fomewhat particular. Her perfonal charms were onot great, for the was very tall, very thin, and very homely. Of the defect of her beauty, she was perhaps fenfible; her vanity, therefore, retreated into her mind, where there is no looking glass, and confequently where we can flatter ourselves with discovering almost whatever beauties we please. This is an encouraging circumstance; and yet I have observed, dear Mrs. Booth, that few women ever feek thefe comforts from within, till they are driven to it by despair of finding any food for their vanity from without. Indeed, I believe, the first wish of our " whole fex is to be handfome."

Here both ladies fixed their eyes on the glass, and

both finiled.

d

1

'My aunt, however,' continued Mrs. Bennet,
from despair of gaining any applause this way, had
applied herself entirely to the contemplation of her
understanding, and had improved this to such a pitch,
that at the age of fifty, at which she was now arrived, she had contracted a hearty contempt for much
the greater part of both sexes: for the women, as being idiots; and for the men, as the admirers of idiots.
That word, and fool, were almost constantly in her
mouth, and were bestowed with great liberality
among all her acquaintance.

among all her acquaintance.
This lady had spent one day only at my father's house in near two years; it was about a month before his second marriage. At her departure she took occasion to whisper me her opinion of the widow, whom she called a pretty idiot, and wondered how her brother could bear such company under his roof; for neither she nor I had, at that time, any suspicion of what afterwards happened.
The

' The letter which my father had just received, and which was the first she had fent him since his marririage, was of fuch a nature, that I should be unjust if I blamed him for being offended; fool and idiot were both plentifully bestowed in it, as well on himself, as on his wife. But what, perhaps, had principally offended him, was that part which related to me; for after much panegyrick on my understanding, and faying he was unworthy of such a daughter, she confidered his match, not only as the highest indifcretion, as it related to himself, but as a downright act of injustice to me. One expression in it I shall never ' forget. "You have placed," faid the, "a woman " above your daughter, who, in understanding, the only valuable gift in nature, is the lowest in the " whole class of pretty idiots." After much more of this kind, it concluded with inviting me to her 6 house.

I can truly fay, that when I had read the letter, I entirely forgave my father's suspicion, that I had made tome complaints to my aunt of his behaviour; for though I was, indeed, innocent, there was furely

colour enough to fuspect the contrary.

Though I had never been greatly attached to my aunt, nor, indeed, had the formerly given me any reason for such an attachment, yet I was well enough · pleased with her present invitation. To say the truth, I led fo wretched a life where I then was, that it was

· impossible not to be a gainer by any exchange. ' I could not, however, bear the thoughts of leaving ' my father with an impression on his mind against me which I did not deserve. I endeavoured, therefore, to remove all his suspicions of my having complained to my aunt, by the most earnest asseverations of my innocence; but they were all to no purpose. ' my tears, all my vows, and all my entreaties, were fruitles. My new mother, indeed, appeared to be my advocate: but the acted her part very poorly; and, far from counterfeiting any defire of fucceeding

in my fuit, she could not conceal the excessive joy which she felt on the occasion.

nd

i-

if

re

f,

ly

d

ie

[-

it

r

n

e

e

f

r

1

Well, Madam, the next day I departed for my aunt's; where, after a long journey of forty miles, I arrived, without having once broke my fait on the ' road; for grief is as capable as food of filling the fromach; and I had too much of the former to admit any of the latter. The fatigue of my journey, and the agitation of my mind, joined to my fasting, fo overpowered my fpirits, that when I was taken from 'my horse, I immediately fainted away in the arms of the man who helped me from my faddle. My aunt expressed great altonishment at seeing me in this condition, with my eyes almost swollen out of my head with tears; but my father's letter, which I delivered her foon after I came to myfelf, pretty well, I believe, ' cured her furprize. She often finiled with a mixture of contempt and anger, while the was reading it; and having pronounced her brother to be a fool, she ' turned to me, and with as much affability as possible, (for the is no great mistress of affability) faid---"Don't be uneasy, dear Molly, for you are come to " the house of a friend; of one who hath sense enough " to differn the author of all this mifchief: depend " upon it, child, I will, ere long, make some people " ashamed of their folly." This kind reception gave " me some comfort, my aunt assuring me, that she ' would convince him how unjuftly he had accused me or having made any complaints to her. A paper war was now began between these two, which not only ' fixed an irreconcileable hatred between them, but ' confirmed my father's displeasure against me, and in the end, I believe, did me no fervice with my aunt; for I was confidered by both as the cause of their dissension; though, in fact, my step-mother, ' who very well knew the affection my aunt had for her, ' had long fince done her bufiness with my father; and' ' as for my aunt's affection towards him, it had been abating several years, from an apprehension that he VOL. II. " did 39.

did not pay sufficient deference to her understanding. I had lived about half a year with my aunt, when I heard of my step-mother's being delivered of a boy,

and the great joy my father expressed on that occasion; but, poor man! he lived not long to enjoy his happiness, for within a month afterwards I had

the melancholy news of his death.

Notwithstanding all the disobligations I had lately received from him, I was sincerely afflicted at my loss of him. All his kindness to me in my infancy, all his kindness to me while I was growing up, recurred to my memory, raised a thousand tender melancholy ideas, and totally obliterated all thoughts of his latter behaviour, for which I made also every

allowance and every excuse in my power.

But what may, perhaps, appear more extraordinary, my aunt began foon to speak of him with concern. She said, he had some understanding formerly, though his passion for that vile woman had, in a great measure, obscured it; and one day, when she was in an ill humour with me, she had the cruelty to throw out a hint, that she had never quarerlled with her brother, if it had not been on my account.

My father, during his life, had allowed my aunt very handsomely for my board; for generosity was too deeply rivetted in his nature to be plucked out out by all the power of his wife. So far, however, she prevailed, that though he died possessed of upwards of 2000l. he left me no more than 100l. which, as he expressed in his will, was to set me up in some

business, if I had the grace to take to any.

'Hitherto my aunt had in general treated me with fome degree of affection, but her behaviour began now to be changed. She soon took an opportunity of giving me to understand, that her fortune was insufficient to keep me; and, as I could not live on the interest of my own, it was high time for me to consider about going into the world. She added, that her

brother having mentioned my fetting up in some business in his will, was very foolish; that I had been bred to nothing; and besides, that the sum was too trifling to set me up in any way of reputation; she desired me therefore, to think of immediately going to service.

'This advice was, perhaps, right enough; and I told her I was very ready to do as she directed me, but I was at that time in an ill state of health: I desired her, therefore, to let me stay with her till my legacy,

which was not to be paid till a year after my father's death, was due; and I then promifed to fatisfy her for my board, to which she readily consented.

And now, Madam, faid Mrs. Bennet, fighing, I am going to open to you those matters which lead directly to that great catastrophe of my life, which hath occasioned my giving you this trouble, and of

trying your patience in this manner.'

R

Y,

C-

y

d

ly

y

7,

2-

-5

ts

y

i-

h

1-

1,

n

1-

-

y

it

S

it

,

)-

1,

le

h

n

1-

le

-

r

Amelia, notwithstanding her impatience, made a very civil answer to this; and then Mrs. Bennet proceeded to relate what is written in the next chapter.

CHAP. IV. Farther Continuation.

"THE curate of the parish where my aunt dwelt, was a young follow of about four and twenty. · He had been left an orphan in his infancy, and en-· tirely unprovided for, when an uncle had the goode ness to take care of his education, both at school and at the university. As the young gentleman was intended for the church, his uncle, though he had ' two daughters of his own, and no very large fortune, purchased for him the next presentation of a living of e near 2001. a year. The incumbent, at the time of ' the purchase, was under the age of fixty, and in ap-' parent good health; notwithstanding which he died ' foon after the bargain, and long before the nephew was capable of orders; fo that the uncle was obliged 6 to give the living to a clergyman, to hold it till the voung man came of proper age.

" The

'The young gentleman had not attained his proper age of taking orders, when he had the misfortuue to lole his uncle and only friend; who, thinking he had fufficiently provided for his nephew by the purchase

of the living, confidered him no farther in his will, but divided all the fortune of which he died possessed

between his two daughters; recommending it to them, however, on his death-bed, to affift their coufin with

money sufficient to keep him at the university till he

· should be capable of ordination.

But as no appointment of this kind was in the will, the young ladies, who received about 2000l. each, thought proper to difregard the laft words of their father: for, besides that both of them were extremely tenacious of their money, they were great enemies to their cousin, on account of their father's kindness to him, and thought proper to let him know that they thought he had robbed them of too much already.

The poor young fellow was now greatly distressed, for he had yet above a year to stay at the university, without any visible means of sustaining himself there.

.

· have

'In this diffres, however, he met with a friend, who had the good nature to lend him the sum of twenty pounds, for which he only accepted his bond for forty, and which was to be paid within a year after his being possessed of his living; that is, within a

· year after his becoming qualified to hold it.

With this finall fum, thus hardly obtained, the poor gentleman made a shift to struggle with all difficulties, till he became of due age to take upon himfelf the character of a deacon. He then repaired to that clergyman to whom his uncle had given the living upon the conditions above mentioned, to procure a title to ordination; but this, to his great surprize and mortification, was absolutely refused him.

'The immediate disappointment did not hurt him
fo much as the conclusion he drew from it; for he
could but have little hopes, that the man who could

have the cruelty to refuse him a title, would vouchfase afterwards to deliver up to him a living of so
considerable a value; nor was it long before this
worthy incumbent told him plainly, that he valued
his uncle's favours at too high a rate to part with
them to any one; nay, he pretended scruples of conscience, and said, that if he had made any slight
promises, which he did not now well remember, they
were wicked and void; that he looked upon himself
as married to his parish, and he could no more give
it up, than he could give up his wife without fin.

'The poor young fellow was now obliged to feek farther for a title, which at length he obtained from

' the rector of the parish where my aunt lived.

He had not long been fettled in the curacy, before an intimate acquaintance grew between him and my aunt, for the was a great admirer of the clergy; and used frequently to say, they were the only conversi-

· ble creatures in the country.

i

The first time she was in this gentleman's company was at a neighbour's christening, where she stood godmother. Here she displayed her whole little stock of knowledge, in order to captivate Mr. Bennet, (I suppose, Madam, you already guess that to have been his name) and before they parted, gave him a very

· strong invitation to her house.

Not a word passed at this christening between Mr. Bennet and myself; but our eyes were not unemployed. Here, Madam, I first selt a pleasing kind of consusion, which I know not how to describe. I selt a kind of uneasiness, yet did not with to be without it. I longed to be alone, yet dreaded the hour of parting. I could not keep my eyes off from the object which caused my consusion, and which I was at once assaid of, and enamoured with. But why do I attempt to describe my situation to one who must, I am sure, have felt the same!

Amelia finiled, and Mrs. Bennet went on thus--O Mrs. Booth! had you feen the person of whom I
K 3

am now speaking, you would not condemn the fuddene nels of my love. Nay, indeed, I had feen him there be-

fore, though this was the first time I had ever heard the music of his voice. O! it was the sweetest that

was ever heard.

Mr. Bennet came to visit my aunt the very next day. She imputed this respectful haste to the powerful charms of her understanding, and resolved to lose

ono opportunity in improving the opinion which she imagined he had conceived of her. She became by

this defire quite ridiculous, and ran into abfurdities

and gallimatias scarce credible.

Mr. Bennet, as I afterwards found, faw her in the fame light with myself; but as he was a very sensi-

ble and well-bred man, he fo well concealed his opiinion from us both, that I was almost angry, and she was pleased even to raptures, declaring herself charmed

with his understanding; though indeed he had faid very little; but I believe he heard himself into her

good opinion, while he gazed himself into love. The two first visits which Mr. Bennet made to my aunt, though I was in the room all the time, I never · fpoke a word; but on the third, on fome argument which arose between them, Mr. Bennet referred him-· felf to me. I took his fide of the question, as indeed · I must to have done justice, and repeated two or three words of Latin. My aunt reddened at this, and ex-· pressed great disdain of my opinion, declaring she was

aftonified that a man of Mr. Bennet's understanding could appeal to the judgment of a filly girl: " Is " fhe," faid my aunt, bridling herfelf, " fit to decide

66 between us?" Mr. Bennet spoke very favourably of what I had faid; upon which my aunt burst al-

· most into a rage, treated me with downright scurrility, called me conceited fool, abused my poor

father for having taught me La in, which, she said, had made me a downright coxcomb, and made me

o prefer myielf to those who were a hundred times my

· superiors in knowledge. She then fell foul on the learned

learned languages, declared they were totally useless,
and concluded that she had read all that was worth
reading, though she thanked Heaven she understood

ono language but her own.

Before the end of his visit, Mr. Bennet reconciled himself very well to my aunt, which, indeed, was no difficult task for him to accomplish; but from that hour she conceived a hatred and rancour towards me,

which I could never appeafe.

' My aunt had, from my first coming into her house, expressed great dislike to my learning. In plain truth, This envy I had long " fhe envied me that advantage. ago discovered, and had taken great pains to smother it; carefully avoiding ever to mention a Latin word in her presence, and always submitting to her authority; for indeed I despised her ignorance too much to dispute with her. By these means I had pretty well fucceeded, and we lived tolerably together. But the affront paid to her understanding by Mr. Bennet in my favour, was an injury never to be forgiven to " me. She took me severely to task that very evening, and reminded me of going to fervice in fuch earnest terms, as almost amounted literally to turning " me out of doors; advising me, in the most insulting manner, to keep my Latin to myfelf; which, the faid, was useless to any one, but ridiculous when ' pretended to by a fervant.

'The next visit Mr. Bennet made at our house, I was not suffered to be present. This was much the shortest of all his visits; and when he went away, he left my aunt in a worse humour than ever I had seen her. The whole was discharged on me in the usual manner, by upbraiding me with my learning, conceit, and poverty; reminding me of obligations, and insisting on my going immediately to service. With all this I was greatly pleased; as it assured me, that Mr. Bennet had said something to her in my favour; and I would have purchased a kind expres-

fion of his at almost any price.

I should scarce, however, have been so fanguine as to draw this conclusion, had I not received some hints, that I had not unhappily placed my affections on a man who made me no return: for though he had scarce addressed a dozen sentences to me, (for, indeed, he had no opportunity) yet his eyes had revealed certain fecrets to mine, with which I was not displeased.

' I remained, however, in a state of anxiety near a month; fometimes pleafing myfelf with thinking Mr. Bennet's heart was in the fame fituation with my own; fometimes doubting that my wishes had flattered and deceived me; and not in the least question-' ing that my aunt was my rival: for I thought no woman could be proof against the charms that had fubdued me. Indeed, Mrs. Booth, he was a charm-' ing young fellow! I must, I must pay this tribute to his memory. O, gracious Heaven, why, why did 'I ever see him! why was I doomed to such misery!' Here she burst into a flood of tears, and remained incapable of speech for some time; during which the gentle Amelia endeavoured all she could to soothe her, and gave sufficient marks of sympathizing in the tender affliction of her friend.

Mrs. Bennet at length recovered her spirits, and proceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. V.

The Story of Mrs. Bennet continued.

I Scarce know where I left off. Oh! I was, I think, telling you, that I efteemed my aunt as my rival; and it is not easy to conceive a greater degree of detestation than I had for her; and what may, perhaps, appear strange, as she daily grew more and more civil to me, my hatred increased with her civility; for I imputed it all to her triumph over me, and to her having secured, beyond all apprehension, the heart I longed for.

'How was I surprized, when one day, with as much good-humour as she was mistress of, (for her counte-nance was not very pleasing) she asked me how I

liked

33

ts,

a

ce

he

in

a

0

liked Mr. Bennet. The question, you will believe, Madam, threw me into great confusion; which she plainly perceived; and, without waiting for my an-· fwer, told me, the was very well fatisfied; for that it did not require her difcernment to read my thoughts in my countenance. "Well, child," faid fhe, " I " have suspected this a great while; and I believe it " will please you to know, that I yesterday made the " fame discovery in your lover." This I confess to vou, was more than I could well bear, and I begged her to fay no more to me at this time on the subject. " Nay, child," aniwered the, " I must tell you all, or " I should not act a friendly part: Mr. Bennet, I am " convinced, hath a pathon for you; but it is a paf-" fion which I think you should not encourage. For, " to be plain with you, I fear he is in love with your " person only. Now this is a love, child, which can-" not produce that rational happiness, which a woman of " fenie ought to expect." In flort, the ran on with a great deal of fruff about rational happiness, and women of fense; and concluded with affuring me, that, after the strictest scrutiny, she could not find that Mr. Bennet had an adequate opinion of my understanding; upon which she vouchsafed to make me many compliments, but mixed with feveral farcasins concerning my learning.

'I hope, Madam, however,' faid she to Amelia, you have not so bad an opinion of my capacity, as to imagine me dull enough to be offended with Mr. Bennet's sentiments; for which I presently knew so well to account. I was, indeed, charmed with his ingenuity, who had discovered, perhaps, the only way of reconciling my aunt to those inclinations

which I now affured myfelf he had for me.

'I was not long left to support my hopes by my fagacity. He soon found an opportunity of declaring his passion. He did this in so forcible, though gentle a manner, with such a profusion of servency and tenderness at once, that his love, like a torrent, bore

every thing before it: and I am almost ashamed to own to you, how very soon he prevailed upon me to

---to---in short, to be an honest woman, and to confess

to him the plain truth. When we were upon a good footing together, he gave me a long relation of what had passed at several interviews with my aunt, at which I had not been present. He said, he had discovered, that as she valued herfelf chiefly on her understanding, so she was extremely jealous of mine, and hated me on account of my learning. This, as he had loved me paffionately from his first seeing me, and had thought of nothing, from that time, but of throwing himfelf at my feet, he saw no way so open to propitiate my aunt as that which he had taken, by commending my beauty, a perfection to which the had long refigned all claim, at the expence of my understanding, in which he lamented my deficiency to a degree almost This he imputed chiefly to my learning. of ridicule. On this occasion he advanced a sentiment, which so e pleased my aunt, that she thought proper to make it her own; for I heard it afterwards more than once from her own mouth. Learning, he faid, had the fame effect on the mind, that strong liquors have on the constitution; both tending to eradicate all our natural fire and energy. His flattery had made fuch a dupe of my aunt, that she affented, without the · least suspicion of his fincerity, to all he said: so fure is vanity to weaken every fortress of the understanding, and to betray us to every attack of the enemy.

'You will believe, Madam, that I readily forgave him all that he faid, not only from that motive which I have mentioned, but as I was affured he had spoke the reverse of his real sentiments. I was not, how-

ever, quite so well pleased with my aunt, who began to treat me as if I was really an idiot. Her contempt

I own, a little piqued me; and I could not help often expressing my resentment, when we were alone toge-

ther, to Mr. Bennet; who never failed to gratify me,

to

to

ess

he

ral

en

he

as

nt

n-

of

at

nt

y

n

A

0

t

e

by making her conceit the subject of his wit; a talent which he possessed in the most extraordinary degree.

This proved of very fatal consequence; for one day, while we were enjoying ourselves in a very thick arbour in the garden, my aunt stole upon us unobferved, and overheard our whole convertation. I wish, my dear, you understood Latin, that I might repeat you a fentence, in which the rage of a tigrefs, that has loft her young, is described. No English poet, as I remember, hath come up to it; nor am I myfelf equal to the undertaking. She burft in upon us, open-mouthed, and after discharging every abusive word almost in the only language she understood, on poor Mr. Bennet, turned us both out of doors; declaring the would fend my rags after me, but would e never more permit me to fet my foot within her threshold.

Gonsider, dear Madam, to what a wretched condition we were now reduced. I had not yet received the small legacy left me by my father; nor was Mr. Bennet master of sive pounds in the whole world.

'In this fituation, the man I doated on to distraction had but a little difficulty to persuade me to a proposal, which, indeed, I thought generous in him to make; as it seemed to proceed from that tenderness for my reputation, to which he ascribed it; indeed, it could proceed from no motive with which I should have been displeased. In a word, within two days we were man and wife.

'Mr. Bennet now declared himself the happiest of men; and for my part, I sincerely declare, I envied no woman upon earth. How little, alas! did I shen know, or suspect, the price I was to pay for all my joys! A match of real love is, indeed, truly paradise; and such perfect happiness seems to be forbidden fruit to mortals, which we are to lament having tasted during the remainder of our lives.

The first uneasiness which attacked us after our marriage was on my aunt's account. It was very disagreeable

disagreeable to live under the nose of so near a relation, who did not acknowledge us, but, on the contrary, was ever doing us all the ill turns in her power; and making a party against us in the parish, which is always easy enough to do amongst the vulgar, against persons who are their superiors in rank, and at the same time their inferiors in fortune. This ' made Mr. Bennet think of procuring an exchange, in which intention he was foon after confirmed by the arrival of the rector. It was the rector's custom to fpend three months every year at his living; for which purpose he reserved an apartment in his parsonage-house, which was full large enough for two fuch · little families as then occupied it: we, at first, promifed ourielyes some little convenience from his boarding with us; and Mr. Bennet began to lay a fide his thoughts of leaving his curacy, at least for · fome time. But these golden ideas presently vanished; for though we both used our utmost endeavours to e please him, we soon found the impossibility of succeeding. He was, indeed, to give you his character in a word, the most peevish of mortals. This tem-· per, notwithstanding that he was both a good and ' pious man, made his company to infufferable, that onothing could compensate it. If his breakfast was ' not ready to a moment; if a dish of meat was too 'much or too little done; in short, if any thing failed of exactly hitting his tafte, he was ture to be out of humour all that day; fo that, indeed, he was fcarce ever in a good temper a whole day together: for fortune · feems to take a delight in thwarting this kind of dif-· polition, to which human life, with it's many croffes and accidents, is in truth by no means fitted.

'Mr. Bennet was now, by my defire as well as his own, determined to quit the parish; but when he attempted to get an exchange, he found it a matter of more difficulty than he had apprehended; for the rector's temper was so well known among the neighbouring clergy, that none of them could be brought

to think of spending three months in a year with him.

ela-

ver;

nich

gar,

and his

111

the

to

for on-

ich

his

ay

for

d;

to

C

er

nid

at

15

d

f

e

e

S

S

After many fruitless enquiries, Mr. Bennet thought best to remove to London, the great mart of all affairs ecclesiastical and civil. This project greatly pleased him, and he resolved, without more delay, to take his leave of the rector, which he did in the most friendly manner possible, and preached his farewel sermon; nor was there a dry eye in the church, except among the sew whom my aunt, who remained still inexorable, had prevailed upon to hate us without any cause.

'To London we came, and took up our lodgings the first night at the inn where the stage-coach set us down; the next morning my husband went out early on his business, and returned with the good news of having heard of a curacy, and of having equipped himself with a lodging in the neighbourhood of a worthy peer, "who," said he, "was my fellow-collegiate: and what is more, I have a direction to a person who will advance your legacy at a very reasonable rate."

'This last particular was extremely agreeable to me; for our last guinea was now broached, and the rector had lent my husband ten pounds to pay his debts in the country: for with all his peevishness he was a good and a generous man, and had, indeed, so many valuable qualities, that I lamented his temper, after I knew him thoroughly, as much on his account, as on my own.

We now quitted the inn, and went to our lodgings, where my husband having placed me in fafety, as he said, he went about the business of the legacy, with good affurance of success.

My husband returned elated with his success, the perfon to whom he applied having undertaken to advance the legacy, which he sulfilled as soon as the proper enquiries could be made, and proper instruments prepared for that purpose.

'This, however, took up so much time, that as our Vol. II. 40.

fund was fo very low, we were reduced to some diftreis, and obliged to live extremely penurious; nor

would all do, without my taking a most disagreeable way of procuring money, by pawning one of my

gowns.

Mr. Bennet was now fettled in a curacy in town, greatly to his fatisfaction, and our affairs feemed to have a prosperous aspect; when he came home to me

one merning in much apparent disorder, looking as · pale as death, and begged me by some means or other

to get him a dram, for that he was taken with a fud-

den faintness and lowness of spirits.

Frighted as I was, I immediately ran down stairs, and procured some rum of the mittress of the house; the first time, indeed, I ever knew him drink any. When he came to himself, he begged me not to be

alarmed, for it was no diftemper, but fomething that had vexed him, which had caused his disorder, which

· he had now perfectly recovered: · He then told me the whole affair. He had hitherto deferred paying a visit to the lord whom I mentioned to have been formerly his fellow-collegiate, and was new his neighbour, till he could put himself in decent rigging. He had now purchased a new cassock, hat and wig, and went to pay his respects to his old ac-

quaintance, who had received from him many civilities and affiftances in his learning at the university, and had promised to return them tourfold hereafter.

It was not without feme difficulty that Mr. Benonet get into the anti-chamber. Here he waited, or. as the phrase is, cooled his heels, for above an hour before he faw his fordship; nor had he seen him then, but by an accident; for my lord was going out, when

· he cafually intercepted him in his passage to his chariot, "He approached to falute him with fome familiarity, though with fome respect, depending on his former

intimacy; when my lord ftopping fhort, very gravely told him, he had not the pleasure of knowing him.

" How! my lord," faid he, " can you have to foon of forgot

"i forgot your old acquaintance Tom Bennet?"---"O,
"Mr. Bennet," cries his lordship, with much referve,
"is it you? you will pardon my memory. I am glad
"to see you, Mr. Bennet: but you must excuse me at
"present, for I am in very great haste." 'He then
broke from him, and without more ceremony, or any
farther invitation, went directly into the chariot.

'This cold reception from a person for whom my husband had a real friendship, and from whom he had great reason to expect a very warm return of affection, to affected the poor man, that it caused all those symp-

toms which I have mentioned before.

dif-

nor

able

my

vn,

to

me

as

her

id-

rs,

e;

y.

be

at

ch

to

ed

15

nt

at

-

3

,

l°

3

9

Though this incident produced no material confequence, I could not pass it over in silence, as of all the missfortunes which ever betel him, it affected my husband the most. I need not, however, to a woman of your delicacy, make any comments on a behaviour which, though I believe it is very common, is nevertheless cruel and base beyond description; and is diametrically opposed to true honour, as well as to goodness.

To relieve the uneafiness which my husband felt on account of his false friend, I prevailed with him to go every night, almost for a fortnight together, to the play; a diversion of which he was greatly fond, and from which he did not think his being a elergyman excluded him. Indeed, it is very well if those austere persons who would be inclined to censure him on this head, have themselves no greater fins to answer for.

head, have themselves no greater sins to answer for.
From this time, during three months, we past our time very agreeably, a little too agreeably, perhaps, for our circumstances; for however innocent diversions may be in other respects, they must be owned to be expensive. When you consider then, Madam, that our income from the curacy was less than forty pounds a year, and that after payment of the debt to the rector, and another to my aunt, with the costs in law which she had occasioned by suing for it, my legacy was reduced to less than seventy pounds, you

will not wonder that in diversions, clothes, and the common expences of life, we had almost confuned our

whole stock.

· The inconfiderate manner in which we had lived for fome time, will, I doubt not, appear to you to want fome excuse; but I have none to make for it. things, however, now happened, which occasioned

much ferious reflection to Mr. Bennet. The one was, that I grew near my time; the other, that he now

received a letter from Oxford, demanding the debt of forty pounds, which I mentioned to you before. The

· former of these he made a pretence of obtaining a delay for the payment of the latter, promising in two months

to pay off half the debt, by which means he obtained

· a forbearance during that time,

I was now delivered of a fon; a matter which should in reality have increased our concern; but, on the contrary, it gave us great pleasure; greater, indeed, could not have been conceived at the birth of an heir to the most plentiful estate; so entirely thoughtless

were we, and so little forecast had we of those many evils and diffreffes to which we had rendered a human

creature, and one fo dear to us, liable. The day of

a christening is in all families, I believe, a day of · jubilee and rejoicing; and yet, if we consider the in-

sterest of that little wretch who is the occasion, how · little reason would the most sanguine persons have for

" their joy!

But though our eyes were too weak to look forward for the fake of our child, we could not be blinded to those dangers that immediately threatened

ourselves. Mr. Bennet, at the expiration of the two

months, received a fecond letter from Oxford, in a very peremptory stile, and threatening a suit without

any farther delay. This alarmed us in the strongest

manner; and my husband, to secure his liberty, was advised for a while to shelter himself in the verge of

" the court.

And now, Madam, I am entering on that scene which

which directly leads to all my mifery.'---Here she stopped and wiped her eyes, and then begging Amelia to excuse her for a few minutes, ran hastily out of the room, leaving Amelia by herself, while she refreshed her spirits with a cordial to enable her to relate what follows in the next chapter.

11.

or

O

d

A' if

1

C H A P. VI, Farther continued.

MRS. Bennet returning into the room, made a fhort apology for her absence, and then proceeded in these words---

We now left our lodging, and took a fecond floor in that very house where you now are, to which we were recommended by the woman where we had before lodged; for the mistresses of both houses were acquainted, and, indeed, we had been all at the play together. To this new lodging, then (such was our wretched destiny!) we immediately repaired, and were received by Mrs. Ellison (how can I bear the sound of that detested name!) with much civility; she took care, however, during the first fortnight of our residence, to wait upon us every Monday morning for her rent; such being, it seems, the custom of this place, which, as it was inhabited chiefly by perfons in debt, is not the region of credit.

'My husband, by the singular goodness of the rector, who greatly compassionated his case, was enabled to continue in his curacy, though he could only do the duty on Sundays. He was, however, sometimes obliged to surnish a person to officiate at his expence; so that our income was very scanty; and the poor little remainder of the legacy being almost spent, we were reduced to some difficulties, and, what was worse, saw still a prospect of greater before our eyes,

'Under these circumstances, how agreeable to poor Mr. Bennet must have been the behaviour of Mrs. Ellison, who, when he carried her her rent on the usual day, told him, with a benevolent smile, that he needed not to give himself the trouble of such exact punctu-

ality. She added, that if it was at any time inconveinient to him, he might pay her when he pleafed. "To fay the truth," fays she, "I never was so much " pleased with any lodgers in my life. I am convinced, "Mr. Bennet, you are a worthy man, and you are " a very happy one too; for you have the prettieft "wife, and the prettieft child, I ever faw." dear Madam, were the words fhe was pleafed to make use of; and I am sure she behaved to me with such an appearance of friendship and affection, that, as I could onot perceive any possible views of interest which she could have in her professions, I easily believed them real. There lodged in the fame house--- O Mrs. Booth! the blood runs cold to my heart, and should run cold to yours when I name him---there lodged in the fame house a lord---the lord, indeed, whom I have fince This lord, Mrs. Ellifon told fee in your company. · me, had taken a great fancy to my little Charley. · Fool that I was, and blinded by my own passion, which made me conceive that an infant, not three ' months old, could be really the object of affection to any besides a parent; and more especially to a young fellow! But if I was filly in being deceived, how wicked was the wretch who deceived me! who used · fuch art, and employed fuch pains, fuch incredible pains to deceive me! He acted the part of a nurse to ' my little infant; he danced it, he lulled it, he kissed ' it; declared it was the very picture of a nephew of his, his favourite fifter's child; and faid fo many kind and fond things of it's beauty, that I myfelf, though, · I believe, one of the tenderest and fondest of mothers, · fcarce carried my own ideas of my little darling's per-· fection beyond the compliments which he paid it. 6 My lord, however, perhaps from modelty before

' my face, fell far short of what Mrs. Ellison reported from him. And now, when the found the impression which was made on me by these means, she took every opportunity of infinuating to me his lordship's

4 many virtues, his great goodness to his fifter's chil-

dren in particular; nor did she fail to drop some hints, which gave me the most simple and groundless hopes of strange consequences from his fondness to my

· Charley.

red.

ch

ed,

ire

eft fe,

ke

an

ld

he

ıl.

11

d

1e

d .

1,

0

When by these means, which, simple as they may appear, were, perhaps, the most artful, my lord had gained fomething more, I think, than my efteem, he took the furest method to confirm himself in my affection. This was, by professing the highest friendfhip for my husband: for, as to myself, I do assure vou, he never shewed me more than common respect; and I hope you will believe, I should have immediately fartled and flown off if he had. Poor I accounted for all the friendship which he expressed for my husband, and all the fondness which she shewed to my boy, from the great prettiness of the one, and the great merit of the other; foolifhly conceiving, that others faw with my eyes, and felt with my heart. Little did I dream, that my own unfortunate person was the fountain of all this lord's goodness, and was

the intended price of it. One evening, as I was drinking tea with Mrs. · Ellison by my lord's fire, (a liberty which she never fcrupled taking when he was gone out) my little

Charley, now about half a year old, fitting in her lap; my lord, accidentally no doubt --- indeed, I then ! thought it to---came in. I was confounded, and

offered to go; but my lord declared, if he difturbed Mrs. Elliton's company, as he phrased it, he would

himself leave the room. When I was thus prevailed on to keep my feat, my lord immediately took my

· little baby into his lap, and gave it some tea there, onot a little at the expence of his embroidery; for he was very richly dreft: indeed, he was as fine a figure

as, perhaps, ever was feen. His behaviour on this occasion gave me many ideas in his favour. I thought

he discovered good sense, good-nature, condescension, and other good qualities, by the fondness he shewed

to my child, and the contempt he feemed to express

for his finery, which fo greatly became him: for I cannot deny, but that he was the handsomest and genteelest person in the world; though such considerations advanced him not a step in my savour.

rations advanced him not a step in my favour. " My husband now returned from church (for this ' happened on a Sunday), and was, by my lord's particular defire, ushered into the room. My lord received him with the utmost politeness, and with many professions of esteem; which he said, he had conceived from Mrs. Ellison's representations of his " merit. He then proceeded to mention the living, which was detained from my husband, of which Mrs. Ellifon had likewife informed him; and faid, he thought it would be no difficult matter to obtain a restoration of it by the authority of the bishop, who was his particular friend, and to whom he would ' take an immediate opportunity of mentioning it. 'This, at last, he determined to do the very next day; when he invited us both to dinner, where we were to be acquainted with his lordship's

fuccess.
My lord now insisted on my husband's staying supper with him, without taking any notice of me; but Mrs. Ellison declared, he should not part man and wife; and that she herself would stay with me. The motion was too agreeable to me to be rejected; and, except the little time I retired to put my child to bed, we spent together the most agreeable evening imaginable; nor was it, I believe, easy to decide, whether Mr. Bennet or myself were most delighted with his

I lordship and Mrs. Ellison: but this I assure you, the generosity of the one, and the extreme civility and kindness of the other, were the subjects of our conversation all the ensuing night, during which we rei-

ther of us closed our eyes.

The next day at dinner, my lord acquainted us, that he had prevailed with the bishop to write to the clergyman in the country; indeed, he told us, that he had engaged the bishop to be very warm in our in.

terest,

or I

and

de-

nis

ır-

e-

ny

n-

S.

le

a

0

d

child.

tereft, and had not the least doubt of success. This threw us both into a flow of spirits; and in the afteronoon, Mr. Bennet, at Mrs. Ellison's request, which was seconded by his lordship, related the history of our lives, from our first acquaintance. My lord feemed much affected with fome tender scenes, which s as no man could better feel, so none could better defcribe than my husband. When he had finished, my · lord begged pardon for mentioning an occurrence which gave him fuch a particular concern, as it had disturbed that delicious state of happiness in which we had lived at our former lodging. "It would be " ungenerous," faid he, " to rejoice at an accident, " which, though it brought me fortunately acquainted " with two of the most agreeable people in the world, " was yet at the expence of your mutual felicity. The " circumstance I mean, is your debt at Oxford; pray " how doth that fland? I am resolved it shall never " difturb your happiness hereafter." At these words, the tears burit from my poor husband's eyes; and in an extasy of gratitude, he cried out, "Your " lordship overcomes me with generosity. If you go " on in this manner, both my wife's gratitude and " mine must be bankrupt." He then acquainted my ' lord with the exact state of the case, and received asfurances from him that the debt should never trouble him. My husband was again breaking out into the warmest expressions of gratitude; but my lord stopped ' him short, faying, " If you have any obligation, it " is to my little Charley here, from whose little inno-" cent finiles I have received more than the value of " this trifling debt in pleasure." I forgot to tell you, that when I offered to leave the room after dinner, ' upon my child's account, my lord would not let me, but ordered the child to be brought to me. He now 6 took it out of my arms, placed it upon his knee, and fed it with some fruit from the desert. In short, it would be more tedious to you than to myself, to re-Late the thousand little tendernesses he shewed to the

child. He gave it many baubles; amongst the rest was a coral, worth, at least, three pounds; and when my husband was confined near a fortnight to his chamber with a cold, he visited the child every day (for to this infant's account were all the visits placed;) and seldom failed of accompanying his visit with a present

to the little thing.

'Here, Mrs. Booth, I cannot help mentioning a doubt which hath often arisen in my mind, fince I have been enough mistress of myself to reslect on this horrid train which was laid to blow up my innocence.

Wicked and barbarous it was to the highest degree, without any question; but my doubt is whether the art or folly of it be the more conspicuous; for however delicate and refined the art must be allowed to have been, the folly, I think, must, upon a fair examination, appear no less astonishing: for to lay all considerations of cruelty and crime out of the case, what a foolish bargain doth the man make for himself, who purchases so poor a pleasure at so high a price!

We had lived near three weeks with as much freedom as if we had been all of the fame family, when one afternoon my lord proposed to my husband to ride down himself to solicit the surrender; for he said the bishop had received an unsatisfactory answer from the parson, and had writ a second letter more pressing; which his lordship now promised us to strengthen by one of his own, that my husband was to carry with him. Mr. Bennet agreed to this proposal with great thankfulness, and the next day was appointed for his journey. The distance was near seventy miles.

My husband set out on his journey, and he had fearce left me before Mrs. Ellison came into the room, and endeavoured to comfort me in his absence: to say the truth, though he was to be from me but a few days, and the purpose of his going was to six

our happiness on a sound foundation for all our future days, I could scarce support my spirits under this first

· fepa-

reft

ien

m-

to

nd

ent

a

I

118

e.

0,

ie

-

O

11

feparation. But though I then thought Mrs. Ellison's intentions to be most kind and friendly, yet the means she used were utterly ineffectual, and appeared to me injudicious. Instead of toothing my uneasiness, which is always the first physic to be given to grief, she rallied me upon it, and began to talk in a very unusual stille of gaiety, in which she treated conjugal love with much ridicule.

I gave her to understand that she displeased me by this discourse; but she soon found means to give such a turn to it, as made a merit of all she had said. And now, when she had worked me into a good bumour, she made a proposal to me, which I at first rejected; but at last satally, too satally, suffered myself to be over-persuaded. This was to go to a maiquerade at Ranelagh, for which my lord had furnished her with tickets.

At these words Amelia turned as pale as death, and hastily begged her friend to give her a glass of water, some air, or any thing. Mrs. Bennet having thrown open the window, and procured the water, which prevented Amelia from fainting, looked at her with much tenderness, and cried---'I do not wonder, my dear Ma-'dam, that you are affected with my mentioning that stall masquerade; since I firmly believe the same ruin was intended for you, at the same place; the apprehension of which occasioned the letter I sent you this morning, and all the trial of your patience which I have made since.'

Ainclia gave her a tender embrace, with many expressions of the warmest gratitude; assured her, she had pretty well recovered her spirits, and begged her to continue her story; which Mrs. Bennet then did. However, as our readers may likewise be glad to recover their spirits also, we shall here put an end to this chapter.

The Story farther continued.

MRS. Bennet proceeded thus---' I was at length prevailed on to accompany Here, I must Mrs. Ellison to the masquerade. confess, the pleasantness of the place, the variety of the dreffes, and the novelty of the thing, gave " me much delight, and raifed my fancy to the high-As I was entirely void of all fuspicion, eft pitch. ' my mind threw off all referve, and pleafure only filled my thoughts. Innocence, it is true, possessed my heart; but it was innocence unguarded, intoxicated with foolish defires, and liable to every temptation. During the first two hours we had many ' trifling adventures, not worth remembering. length my lord joined us, and continued with me all the evening; and we danced feveral dances together. I need not, I believe, tell you, Madam, how engaging ' his conversation is. I wish I could with truth fay, I was not pleased with it; or, at least, that I had a right to be pleafed with it. But I will difguife nothing from you: I now began to discover that he had fome affection for me; but he had already too firm a footing in my esteem to make the discovery shocking. I will, I will own the truth; I was delighted with perceiving a passion in him, which I was not " unwilling to think he had had from the beginning, and to derive his having concealed it fo long from his awe of my virtue, and his respect to my understanding. . I affure you, Madam, at the same time, my intentions were, never to exceed the bounds of innocence. I was charmed with the delicacy of his passion; and in the foolish, thoughtless turn of mind in which I then was, I fancied I might give some very distant encouragement to fuch a passion, in such a man, with the utmost fafety; that I might indulge my vanity and interest at once, without being guilty of the least injury. I know Mrs. Booth will condemn all these thoughts, and I condemn them no less myself; for it is now my " stedfast

fledfast opinion, that the woman who gives up the · least outwork of her virtue, doth in that very mo-

ment betray the citadel.

About two o'clock we returned home, and found a very handsome collation provided for us. I was asked to partake of it; and I did not, I could not refuse. I was not, however, entirely void of all suspicion, and I made many resolutions; one of which was, not to drink a drop more than my usual stint. This was, at the utmost, little more than half a pint

of fmall punch.

any

uit

ety

ave

zh-

011, nly

led

Ki-

3-

ny

At

lle

r.

g

y,

3

)-

d

n

d

1

e

· I adhered strictly to my quantity; but in the quality, I am convinced, I was deceived; for, before I left the room, I found my head giddy. What the villain gave me, I know not; but befides being intoxicated, I perceived effects from it which are not to be described.

' Here, Madam, I must draw a curtain over the re-· fidue of that fatal night. Let it suffice, that it involved me in the most dreadful ruin; a ruin to which I can truly fay, I never consented; and of which I was scarce conscious, when the villainous man avowed

it to my face in the morning.

'Thus I have deduced my story to the most horrid e period; happy had I been had this been the period of my life; but I was referved for greater mileries: but before I enter on them, I will mention fomething very remarkable, with which I was now acquainted, and that will shew there was nothing of accident which had befallen me; but that all was the effect of · a long, regular, premeditated defign.

'You may remember, Madam, I told you that we were recommended to Mrs. Ellifon by the woman at whose house we had before lodged. This woman, it feems, was one of my lord's pimps, and had before

· introduced me to his lordship's notice.

' You are to know then, Madam, that this villain, this lord, now confessed to me, that he had first seen me in the gallery at the oratorio: whither I had gone VOL. II. 40.

with tickets, with which the woman where I first Iodged had prefented me, and which were, it feems, purchased by my lord. Here I first met the vile be-

trayer, who was difguifed in a rug coat, and a patch

" upon his face.

At these words Amelia cried --- O gracious Heae vens!' and fell back in her chair. Mrs. Bennet, with proper applications, brought her back to life; and then Amelia acquainted her, that the herfelf had feen the fame person in the same place, and in the same disguise. O, Mrs. Bennet,' cried the, how am I indebted to vou! what words, what thanks, what actions can demonstrate the gratitude of my sentiments! I look upon you, and shall always look upon you, as my preserver from the brink of a precipice, from which I was falling into the fame ruin which you have fo gee nerously, so kindly, and so nobly disclosed for my " fake."

Here the two ladies compared notes, and it appeared. that his lordship's behaviour at the oratorio had been alike to both; that he made use of the very same words. the very same actions to Amelia, which he had practised over before on poor unfortunate Mrs. Bennet. It may, perhaps, be thought strange, that neither of them could recollect him; but so it was. And, indeed, if we confider the force of difguile, the very fhort time that either of them was with him at this first interview, and the very little curiofity that must have been supposed in the minds of the ladies, together with the amusement in which they were then engaged, all wonder will, I apprehend, cease. Amelia, however, now declared, the remembered his voice and features perfectly well, and was thoroughly fatisfied he was the same person. She then accounted for his not having visited in the afternoon, according to his promise, from her declared resolutions to Mrs. Ellison not to see him. She now burst forth into some very satirical invectives against that lady, and declared she had the art, as well as the wickedness, of the devil himself. Many

Many congratulations now past from Mrs. Bennet to Amelia, which were returned with the most hearty acknowledgments from that lady. But instead of filling our paper with these, we shall pursue Mrs. Bennet's ftory, which she refumed, as we shall find in the next chapter.

> CHAP. VIII. Farther Continuation.

No fooner, faid Mrs. Bennet, continuing her flory, ' was my lord departed, than Mrs. Ellifon came to me. She behaved in fuch a manner, when the became acquainted with what had past, that though I was at first satisfied of her guilt, she began to stagger my opinion; and, at length, prevailed upon me entirely to acquit her. She raved · like a mad woman against my lord, swore he should o not stay a moment in her house, and that she would e never speak to him more. In short, had she been the · most innocent woman in the world, she could not have fpoke nor acted any otherwife; nor could she have vented more wrath and indignation against the betrayer.

'That part of her denunciation of vengeance, which concerned my lord's leaving the house, she vowed ' should be executed immediately; but then, seeming to recollect herself, she said, "Consider, my dear child, " it is for your fake alone I speak; will not such a " proceeding give some suspicion to your husband?" I answered, that I valued not that; that I was resolved ' to inform my husband of all, the moment I faw him; with many expressions of detestation of myself, and an

indifference for life, and for every thing elfe.

" Mrs. Ellison, however, found means to soothe me, and to fatisfy me with my own innocence; a point in which, I believe, we are all eafily convinced. In fhort, I was perfuaded to acquit both myself and her, to lay the whole guilt upon my lord, and to re-

· folve to conceal it from my husband.

'The whole day I confined myself to my chamber, and faw no person but Mrs. Ellison. I was, indeed, ashamed

* ashamed to look any one in the face. Happily for me, my lord went into the country without attempting to come near me; for I believe his fight would

. The next day I told Mrs. Ellison, that I was re-

have driven me to madness.

folved to leave her lodgings the moment my lord came to town; not on her account, (for I really inclined to think her innocent) but on my lord's, whose face I was resolved, if possible, never more to behold. She told me, I had no reason to quit her house on that score; for that my lord himself had left her lodgings that morning, in resentment, she believed, of the abuses which she had cast on him the day before.

This confirmed me in the opinion of her innocence; nor hath the from that day to this, till my acquaintance with you, Madam, done any thing to forfeit my opinion. On the contrary, I owe her many good offices; amongst the rest I have an annuity of one hundred and fifty pounds a year from my lord, which I know was owing to her folicitations; for she is not void of generosity or good-nature; though, by what I have lately seen, I am convinced she was the cause of my ruin, and hath endeavoured to lay the

fame snares for you.

But to return to my melancholy story. My husband returned at the appointed time; and I met him with an agitation of mind not to be described. Perhaps the fatigue which he had undergone in his ' journey, and his diffatisfaction at his ill fuccels, pre-· vented his taking notice of what I feared was too vifible. All his hopes were entirely frustrated; the s clergyman had not received the bishop's letter; and as to my lord's, he treated it with derision and conf tempt. Tired as he was, Mr. Bennet would not fit down till he had enquired for my lord, intending to go and pay his compliments. Poor man! he little fuspected that he had deceived him, as I have fince known, concerning the bishop; much less did he fuff pect any other injury. But the lord --- the villain was

gone out of town, so that he was forced to postpone

all his gratitude.

for

pt-

uld

re-

me

ed

e I

he

at

gs

he

0-

C-

r-

V

of

١,

le

y

e

e

Mr. Bennet returned to town late on the Saturday might; nevertheless he performed his duty at church the next day; but I refused to go with him. This, I think, was the first refusal I was guilty of since our marriage; but I was become so miserable, that his presence, which had been the source of all my happiness, was become my bane. I will not say, I hated to see him; but I can say I was ashamed, nay, afraid, to look him in the sace. I was conscious of I knew not what: guilt, I hope, it cannot be called."
I hope not; nay, I think not: cries Amelia.

My husband,' continued Mrs. Bennet, 'perceived' my distatisfaction, and imputed it to his ill success in the country. I was pleased with this self-delusion; and yet, when I fairly computed the agonies I suffered at his endeavours to comfort me on that head, I paid most severely for it. O, my dear Mrs. Booth, happy is the deceived party between true lovers, and

wretched indeed is the author of the deceit!

'In this wretched condition I past a whole week, the most miserable, I think, of my whole life, endeavouring to humour my husband's delusion, and to conceal my own tortures; but I had reason to fear I could not succeed long; for on the Saturday night I perceived a visible alteration in his behaviour to me. He went to bed in an apparent ill-humour, turned fullenly from me; and if I offered at any endear-

· ments, he gave me only peevifh answers.

After a restless, turbulent night, he rose early on Sunday morning, and walked down stairs. I expected his return to breakfast, but was soon informed by the maid, that he was gone forth; and that it was no more than seven o'clock. All this, you may believe, Madam, alarmed me; I saw plainly he had discovered the statal secret, though by what means I could not divine. The state of my mind was very little short of madness. Sometimes I thought of run-

M 3 nin

ning away from my injured husband, and sometimes

s of putting an end to my life.

In the midst of such perturbations I spent the day. My husband returned in the evening .-- O heavens! can I describe what followed! It is impossible; I ! shall fink under the relation. He entered the room, with a face as white as a theet, his lips trembling, and his eyes red as coals of fire, and starting as it were from his head. " Molly," cries he, throwing s himself into the chair, " are you well?"---" Good " heavens!" fays I, " what's the matter ?--- Indeed I " cannot fay I am well." --- " No!" fays he, farting from his chair, "false monster! you have betrayed " me, destroyed me; you have ruined your husband." 'Then looking like a fury, he matched off a large book from the table, and with the malice of a madman f threw it at my head, and knocked me down backwards. He then caught me up in his arms, and skiffed me with most extravagant tenderness; then · looking me stedfastly in the face for several moments, f the tears gushed in a torrent from his eyes, and with his utmost violence he threw me again on the floor--s kicked me, stamped upon me. I believed, indeed, ! his intent was to kill me, and I believe he thought he f had accomplished it. ' I lay on the ground for some minutes, I believe, deprived of my fenses. When I recovered myself, I found my husband lying by my side on his face, and the solood running from him. It feems when he thought he had dispatched me, he run his head with all his force against a cheft of drawers which stood in the f room, and gave himself a dreadful wound in his head. I can truly fay, I felt not the least resentment for

from me. I now used the most earnest entreaties to him to compose himself; and endeavoured with my feeble arms to raise him from the ground. At length

5 the usage I had received; I thought I deserved it all; though, indeed, I little guessed what he had suffered

s he broke from me, and springing from the ground, flung

him-

himself into a chair, when looking wildly at me, he cried, "Go from me, Molly. I beseech you, leave me; I would not kill you." He then discovered to me.—O Mrs. Booth, can you not guess it!---I was, indeed, polluted by the villain; I had infected my husband. O heavens! why do I live to relate any

thing so horrid; I will not, I cannot yet survive it!
I cannot forgive myself; Heaven cannot forgive me!

Here the became inarticulate with the violence of her grief, and fell presently into such agonies, that the frighted Amelia began to call aloud for some affistance. Upon this a maid-servant came up, who seeing her mistress in a violent convulsion sit, presently screamed out she was dead; upon which one of the other sex made his appearance, and who should this be but the honest serjeant; whose countenance soon made it evident, that though a soldier, and a brave one too, he was not the least concerned of all the company on this occasion.

The reader, if he hath been acquainted with scenes of this kind, very well knows, that Mrs. Bennet, in the usual time, returned again to the possession of her voice; the first use of which she made, was to express her astonishment at the presence of the serieant, and with a

frantic air to enquire who he was.

nes

s!

n,

it

g

d

I

d

The maid, concluding that her mistress was not yet returned to her senses, answered, 'Why, 'tis my master, 'Madam. Heaven preserve your senses, Madam!-Lord, 'Sir, my mistress must be very bad not to know you.'

What Atkinson thought at this instant, I will not fay; but certain it is, he looked not over wise. He attempted twice to take hold of Mrs. Bennet's hand, but she withdrew it hastily; and presently after, rising up from her chair, she declared herself pretty well again, and desired Atkinson and the maid to withdraw, both of whom presently obeyed; the serjeant appearing by his countenance to want comfort almost as much as the lady did to whose assistance he had been summoned.

It is a good maxim, to trust a person entirely, or not at all; for a secret is often innocently blabbed out by

those who know but half of it. Certain it is, that the maid's speech communicated a suspicion to the mind of Amelia, which the behaviour of the serjeant did not tend to remove. What that is, the sagacious readers may likewise probably suggest to themselves; if not, they must wait our time for disclosing it. We shall now resume the history of Mrs. Bennet, who, after many apologies, proceeded to the matters in the next chapter.

CHAP. IX.

The Conclusion of Mrs. Bennet's History.

WHEN I became sensible, cries Mrs. Bennet, of the injury I had done my husband, I threw myself at his feet, and embracing his knees, while I bathed them with my tears, I begged a patient hearing; declaring if he was not satisfied with what I should say, I would become a willing victim of his

resentment. I said, and I said truly, that if I owed my death that instant to his hands, I should have no other terror, but that of the satal consequence which

it might produce to himself.

' He seemed a little pacified, and bid me say what-

ever I pleafed.

I then gave him a faithful relation of all that had happened. He heard me with great attention; and, at the conclusion, cried, with a deep figh, "O Molly, "I believe it all. You must have been betrayed as

"you tell me; you could not be guilty of such baseness, such cruelty, such ingratitude." He then-O it is impossible to describe his behaviour--he ex-

pressed such kindness, such tenderness, such concern for the manner in which he had used me---I cannot dwell on this scene---I shall relapse---you must ex-

cuse me.'

Amelia begged her to omit any thing which so af-

fected her; and the proceeded thus.

My husband, who was more convinced than I of Mrs. Ellison's guilt, declared he would not sleep that night in her house. He then went out to see for a lodging: he gave me all the money he had, and left

me to pay her bill, and put up the cloaths, telling me, if I had not money enough, I might leave the cloaths as a pledge; but he vowed he could not answer for

· himself, if he saw the face of Mrs. Ellison.

Words can scarce express the behaviour of that artful woman, it was fo kind and fo generous. She faid, the did not blame my husband's referement, nor could she expect any other but that he and all the world should censure her. That she hated her house almost as much as we did, and detested her cousin, if possible, more. In fine, she said that I might leave my cloaths there that evening; but that she would fend them to us the next morning. That she scorned the thought of detaining them; and as for the paltry debt, we might pay her whenever we pleased:---for, to do her justice, with all her vices, she hath some good " in her.'

' Some good in her indeed!' cried Amelia, with

great indignation.

the

d of

not

lers

ot,

OW

my

er.

et.

w

I

r-

I

is

d

0

1

We were fcarce fettled in our new lodgings,' contimued Mrs. Bennet, ' when my husband began to complain of a pain in his infide. He told me he feared he had done himself some injury in his rage, and had burst something within him. As to the odious --- I cannot bear the thought, the great skill of his furgeon foon entirely cured him; but his other complaint, instead of yielding to any application, grew still worse and worse, nor ever ended till it · brought him to his grave.

O, Mrs. Booth, could I have been certain that I had occasioned this, however innocently I had occafioned it, I could never have furvived it; but the fure geon who opened him after his death, affured me, that he died of what they call a polypus in his heart,

and that nothing which had happened on account of me, was in the least the occasion of it.

I have, however, related the affair truly to you. The first complaint I ever heard of the kind, was within a day or two after we left Mrs. Ellison's; and

this complaint remained till his death, which might s induce him, perhaps, to attribute his death to ano-

ther cause; but the surgeon, who is a man of the highest eminence, hath always declared the contrary

to me, with the most positive certainty; and this

opinion hath been my only comfort.

When my husband died, which was about ten weeks after we quitted Mrs. Ellison's, of whom I had then a different opinion from what I have now, I was left in the most wretched condition imaginable. I believe, Madam, the shewed you my letter. Indeed she did every thing for me at that time, which I could have expected from the best of friends. She supplied me with money from her own pocket, by which means I

was preserved from a distress in which I must have

' Her kindness to me in this season of diffress pre-

otherwise inevitably perished.

vailed on me to return again to her house. Why, indeed, should I have refused an offer so very convef nient for me to accept, and which feemed fo generous in her to make! Here I lived a very retired life, with my little babe, feeing no company but Mrs. Ellifon herself, for a full quarter of a year. At last Mrs. · Ellison brought me a parchment from my lord, in which he had fettled upon me, at her instance, as she 4 told me, and as I believe it was, an annuity of one hundred and fifty pounds a year. This was, I think, the very first time she had mentioned his hateful name to me fince my return to her house. And

he now prevailed upon me, though, I affure you not without much difficulty, to fuffer him to execute the deed in my presence.

' I will not describe our interview; I am not able to describe it, and I have often wondered how I found fpirits to support it. This I will say for him, that,

if he was not a real penitent, no man alive could act

the part better.

Beside resentment, I had another motive of my backwardness to agree to such a meeting; and this

was fear. I apprehended, and furely not without reason, that the annuity was rather meant as a bribe

than a recompense, and that farther designs were laid

against my innocence: but in this I found myself
 happily deceived; for neither then, nor at any time

fince, have I ever had the least folicitation of that

kind. Nor, indeed, have I feen the least occasion to

think my lord had any fuch defires.

Good heavens! what are these men! what is this appetite, which must have novelty and resistance for it's provocatives; and which is delighted with us no longer than while we may be considered in the light of

e enemies!

ight

mo-

the

ary

his

eks

nen

eft

ve.

lid

ve

ne

I

ve

7,

-

S

h

I thank you, Madam,' cries Amelia, for relieving me from my fears on your account; I trembled at the consequence of this second acquaintance

with fuch a man, and in fuch a fituation.'

'I affure you, Madam, I was in no danger,' returned Mrs. Bennet; 'for befides that I think I could' have pretty well relied on my own resolution, I have heard since, at St. Edmund's Bury, from an intimate

acquaintance of my lord's, who was an entire stranger

to my affairs, that the highest degree of inconstancy is his character; and that few of his numberless mit-

tresses had ever received a second visit from him.

Well, Madam,' continued she, 'I think I have little more to trouble you with; unless I should relate to you my long ill state of health, from which I am lately, I thank Heaven, recovered; or unless I should mention to you the most grievous accident that ever befel me, the loss of my poor dear Charley.' Here she made a full stop, and the tears ran down into her

bosom.

Amelia was filent a few minutes, while she gave the lady time to vent her passion; after which she began to pour forth a vast profusion of acknowledgements for the trouble she had taken in relating her history; but chiefly for the motive which had induced her to it, and for the kind warning which she had given her by

the little note which Mrs. Bennet had fent her that

morning.

' Yes, Madam,' cries Mrs. Bennet, ' I am con-' vinced by what I have lately feen, that you are the deftined facrifice to this wicked lord; and that Mrs. Ellison, whom I no longer doubt to have been the instrument of my ruin, intended to betray you in the fame manner. The day I met my lord in your apartment, I began to entertain some suspicions, and I took Mrs. Ellifon very roundly to talk upon them. 4 Her behaviour, notwithstanding many affeverations to the contrary, convinced me I was right; and I intended, more than once, to speak to you, but could onot; till last night the mention of the masquerade determined me to delay it no longer. I therefore fent ' you that note this morning; and am glad you fo · luckily discovered the writer, as it hath given me this opportunity of easing my mind; and of honeftly " shewing you how unworthy I am of your friendship, at the same time that I so earnestly defire it.

CHAP. X.

Being the last Chapter of the seventh Book.

MELIA did not fail to make proper compliments to Mrs. Bennet on the conclusion of her speech in the last chapter. She told her, that from the first moment of her acquaintance she had the strongest inclination to her friendship; and that her defires of that kind were much increased by hearing her story. 'Indeed, ' Madam,' fays she, 'you are much too severe a judge on yourfelf; for they must have very little candour,

in my opinion, who look upon your case with any se-' vere eye. To me, I affure you, you appear highly " the object of compassion; and I shall always esteem

' you as an innocent and an unfortunate woman.'

Amelia would then have taken her leave; but Mrs. Bennet so strongly pressed her to stay to breakfast, that at length she complied: indeed, she had fasted so long, and her gentle spirits had been so agitated with variety

of passions, that nature very strongly seconded Mrs. Bennet's motion.

Whilst the maid was preparing the tea-equipage, Amelia, with a little flyness in her countenance, asked Mrs. Bennet, if Serjeant Atkinson did not lodge in the fame house with her: the other reddened so extremely at the question, repeated the serjeant's name with such hesitation, and behaved so aukwardly, that Amelia wanted no farther confirmation of her fuspicions. She would not, however, declare them abruptly to the other, but began a differtation on the ferjeant's virtues; and after observing the great concern which he had manifested, when Mrs. Bennet was in her fit, concluded with faying, the believed the ferjeant would make the best husband in the world; for that he had great tenderness of heart, and a gentleness of manners not often to be found in any man, and much feldomer in persons of his rank.

' And why not in his rank?' faid Mrs. Bennet. ' Indeed, Mrs. Booth, we rob the lower order of mankind of their due. I do not deny the force and power of education; but when we confider how very injudicious is the education of the better fort in general, how little they are instructed in the practice of virtue, we shall not expect to find the heart much improved by it. And even as to the head, how very flightly ' do we commonly find it improved, by what is called a genteel education! I have myself, I think, seen in-· stances of as great goodness, and as great understanding too, among the lower fort of people as among the ' higher. Let us compare your ferjeant, now, with the lord who hath been the subject of our conversa-' tion: on which fide would an impartial judge decide " the balance to incline?"

'How monstrous then,' cries Amelia, 'is the opi-'nion of those who consider our matching ourselves the 'least below us in degree, as a kind of contamination!'

'A most absurd and preposterous sentiment,' answered Mrs. Bennet, warmly; 'how abhorrent from Yol. II. 40. N 'justice,

iustice, from common sense, and from humanity! but how extremely incongruous with a religion, which

professes to know no difference of degree, but ranks all mankind on the footing of brethren! Of all kinds

of pride, there is none so unchristian as that of station; in reality, there is none so contemptible. Con-

tempt, indeed, may be faid to be it's own object;
for my own part, I know none so despicable as those

who despise others.'

'I do assure you,' said Amelia, 'you speak my own fentiments. I give you my word, I should not be assumed of being the wife of an honest man in any station. Nor, if I had been much higher than I was, should I have thought myself degraded by calling our

honest serjeant my husband.'
 Since you have made this declaration,' cries Mrs.
 Bennet, 'I am sure you will not be offended at a secret

I am going to mention to you.'

'Indeed, my dear,' answered Amelia, smiling, 'I wonder rather you have concealed it so long; especially

after the many hints I have given you.'

Nay, pardon me, Madam, replied the other; I do not remember any fuch hints; and, perhaps, you do not even guess what I am going to fay. My

fecret is this: that no woman never had so sincere, so passionate a lover, as you have had in the serjeant.

"I a lover in the ferjeant? I!' cries Amelia, a little furprized.

Have patience,' answered the other; 'I say, you, my dear. As much surprized as you appear, I tell you no more than the truth; and yet it is a truth you

could hardly expect to hear from me, especially with
 fo much good-humour; since I will honestly confess

to you---but what need have I to confess what I know you guess already! Tell me now sincerely, don't

you guess?"

'I guess, indeed, and hope,' said she, 'that he is your husband.'

· He is indeed my husband, cries the other; and I

am most happy in your approbation. In honest truth, you ought to approve my choice, since you was every way the occasion of my making it. What you said of him, very greatly recommended him to my opinion; but he endeared himself to me most by what he said of you. In short, I have discovered, that he hath always loved you with such a faithful, honest, noble, generous passion, that I was consequently convinced, his mind must possess all the ingredients of such a passion; and what are these, but true honour, goodness, modesty, bravery, tenderness, and, in a word, every human virtue? Forgive me, my dear; but I was uneasy till I became myself the object of such a passion.

'And do you really think,' faid Amelia, fmiling, that I shall forgive you robbing me of such a lover? or, supposing what you banter me with was true, do you really imagine you could change such a passion.'

,

t

e

1

S

V

t

S

I

'No, my dear,' answered the other; 'I only hope I have changed the object: for be affured, there is no greater vulgar error, than that it is impossible for a man who loves one woman, ever to love another. On the contrary, it is certain, that a man who can love one woman so well at a distance, will love another better that is nearer to him. Indeed, I have heard one of the best husbands in the world declare, in the presence of his wise, that he had always loved a princes with adoration. These passions, which reside only in very amorous, and very delicate minds, feed only on the delicacies there growing, and leave all the substantial food, and enough of the delicacy too, for the wise.'

The tea being now ready, Mrs. Bennet---or, if you please, for the future, Mrs. Atkinson---proposed to call in her husband; but Amelia objected. She said, she should be glad to see him any other time, but was then in the utmost hurry, as she had been three hours absent from all she most loved; however, she had scarce drank a dish of tea before she changed her mind; and N 2 saying

faying the would not part man and wife, defired Mr.

Atkinson might appear.

The maid answered, that her master was not at home; which words she had scarce spoken, when he knocked hastily at the door, and immediately came running into the room all pale and breathless; and addreffing himself to Amelia, cried out, 'I am forry, my dear lady, to bring you ill news; but Captain Booth' 'What! what! cries Amelia, dropping the tea-cup from her hand, ' is any thing the matter with inim?'---' Don't be frightened, my dear lady,' faid the ferjeant; 'he is in very good health; but a miffortune hath happened.'--- Are my children well?' faid Amelia. 'O, very well,' answered the serjeant. Fray, Madam, don't be frightened; I hope it will fignify nothing: he is arrested; but I hope to get him out of their damned hands immediately.'---Where is he? cries Amelia; 'I will go to him this instant!'--- He begs you will not,' answered the ferjeant. 'I have fent his lawyer to him, and am going back with Mrs. Ellifon this moment; but I beg your · ladyship, for his sake, and for your own sake, not to go.'--- Mrs. Ellison! what is Mrs. Ellison to do?' cries Amelia. 'I must and will go.' Mrs. Atkinson then interposed, and begged that she would not hurry her spirits, but compose herself, and go home to her children, whither she would attend her. She comforted her with the thoughts, that the captain was in no immediate danger; that she could go to him when she would; and defired her to let the ferjeant return with Mrs. Ellison; saying, she might be of service, and that there was much wisdom, and no kind of shame, in making use of bad people on certain occasions.

'And who,' cries Amelia, a little come to herself,

* hath done this barbarous action?'

One I am ashamed to name,' cries the serjeant; indeed, I had always a very different opinion of him; I

sould not have believed any thing but my own ears

and eyes; but Dr. Harrison is the man who hath

done the deed.'

.

t

le

ne

1-

y

1

ne

h

id

C-

3,

t.

II

et

is r-

ng

ur

33

nc

ry

er

ed

n-

he

th

nd

in

lf,

t;

; I

rs

d

Dr. Harrison!' cries Amelia. Well, then, there is an end of all goodness in the world. I will never

have a good opinion of any human being more.'

The serjeant begged that he might not be detained from the captain; and that if Amelia pleased to go home, he would wait upon her. But she did not chuse to see Mrs. Ellison at this time; and after a little consideration, she resolved to stay where she was; and Mrs. Atkinson agreed to go and setch her children to her, it being not many doors distant.

The ferjeant then departed: Amelia, in her confufion, never having once thought of wishing him joy on

his marriage.

BOOK VIII.

CHAP. I.

Being the first Chapter of the eighth Book.

THE history must now look a little backward to those circumstances which led to the catastrophe

mentioned at the end of the last book.

When Amelia went out in the morning, she left her children to the care of her husband. In this amiable office he had been engaged near an hour; and was at that very time lying along on the floor, and his little things crawling and playing about him, when a most violent knock was heard at the door; and immediately a footman, running up stairs, acquainted him, that his lady was taken violently ill, and carried into Mrs. Chenevix's toy-shop.

Booth no fooner heard this account, which was delivered with great appearance of hafte and earnestness, than he leaped suddenly from the floor, and leaving his children roaring at the news of their mother's illness, in strict charge with his maid, he ran as fast as his legs could carry him to the place: or towards the place rather; for before he arrived at the shop, a gentleman

N 3 flopped

Booth entered the coach without any refistance, which had he been inclined to make, he must have plainly

r fo

are,

You

ian;

In

my

Dr.

oth.

Tell,

t let

Che-

ere-

ere.

you, is

will

var.

r, I

al-

1, I

iece

vith

es,

n's

the

faid

hat

in.

our

nust

rt,

it.

He

to

ce,

y

plainly perceived would have been ineffectual, as the bailiff appeared to have feveral followers at hand, two of whom, befide the commander in chief, mounted with him into the coach. As Booth was a sweet-tempered man, as well as somewhat of a philosopher, he behaved with all the good-humour imaginable, and indeed, with more than his companions; who, however, shewed him what they call civility—that is, they neither struck him nor spit in his face.

Notwithstanding the pleasantry which Booth endeavoured to preserve, he in reality envied every labourer whom he saw pass by him in his way. The charms of liberty against his will rushed on his mind; and he could not avoid suggesting to himself, how much more happy was the poorest wretch, who without controul could repair to his homely habitation, and to his family, compared to him, who was thus violently, and yet lawfully, torn away from the company of his wife and children! And their condition, especially that of his Amelia, gave his heart many a severe and bitter pang.

At length he arrived at the bailitf's mansion, and was ushered into a room in which were several persons. Booth desired to be alone; upon which the bailitf waited on him up stairs, into an apartment, the windows of which were well fortisted with iron bars; but the walls had not the least outwork raised before them; they were, indeed, what is generally called naked, the bricks having been only covered with a thin plaister,

which in many places was mouldered away.

The first demand made upon Booth was for coach-hire, which amounted to two shillings, according to the bailist's account; that being just double the legal fare. He was then asked if he did not chuse a bowl of punch; to which he having answered in the negative, the bailist replied, 'Nay, Sir, just as you please. I don't ask you to drink, if you don't chuse it; but certainly you know the custom; the house is full of prisoners, and I can't afford gentlemen a room to themselves for nothing,'

Booth

Booth presently took this hint; indeed it was a pretty broad one; and told the bailiff he should not scruple to pay him his price; but, in fact, he never drank unless at his meals. 'As to that, Sir,' cries the bailiff, 'it is just as your honour pleases. I scorn to impose upon any gentleman in missortunes: I wish you well out of them, for my part. Your honour can take nothing amiss of me; I only does my duty, what I am bound to do; and as you says you don't care to drink any thing, what will you be pleased to have for dinner?'

Booth then complied in bespeaking a dish of meat, and told the bailist, he would drink a bottle with him after dinner. He then desired the favour of pen, ink, and paper, and a messenger; all which were immediately procured him, the bailist telling him he might send wherever he pleased, and repeating his concern for Booth's missfortunes, and a hearty desire to see the end of them.

The messenger was just dispatched with the letter, when who should arrive but honest Atkinson. A soldier of the guards, belonging to the same company with the serjeant, and who had known Booth at Gibraltar, had seen the arrest, and heard the orders given to the coachman. This fellow accidentally meeting Atkinson, had acquainted him with the whole affair.

At the appearance of Atkinson, joy immediately overspread the countenance of Booth. The ceremonials which passed between them are unnecessary to be repeated. Atkinson was soon dispatched to the attorney, and to Mrs. Ellison, as the reader hath before heard

from his own mouth.

Booth now greatly lamented that he had writ to his wife. He thought she might have been acquainted with the affair better by the serjeant. Booth begged him, however, to do every thing in his power to comfort her, to assure her that he was in perfect health, and good spirits, and to lessen, as much as possible, the con-

cern which he knew she would have at reading this

The ferjeant, however, as the reader hath feen, brought nimfelf the first account of the arrest. Indeed. the other messenger did not arrive till a full hour after-This was not owing to any flowners of his, but to many previous errands which he was to execute before the delivery of the letter; for, notwithstanding the earnest defire which the bailiff had declared to fee Booth out of his troubles, he had ordered the porter, who was his follower, to call upon two or three other bailiffs, and as many attornies, to try to load his

prisoner with as many actions as possible.

tty e to

less

· it

pon

out

no-

am

ink

for

at,

nim

nk,

di-

ght

for

end

ter,

ol-

iny

ib-

1 to At-

ely

als

re-

ey,

ard

his

ted

red

m-

nd

n-

n

Here the reader may be apt to conclude, that the bailiff, instead of being a friend, was really an enemy to poor Booth; but, in fact, he was not fo. His defire was no more than to accumulate bail-bonds; for the bailiff was reckoned an boneft and good fort of man in his way, and had no more malice against the bodies in his custody, than a butcher hath to those in his: and as the latter, when he takes his knife in hand, hath no idea but of the joints into which he is to cut the carcale; so the former, when he handles his writ, hath no other defign but to cut out the body into as many bail-bonds as possible. As to the life of the animal, or the liberty of the man, they are thoughts which never obtrude themselves on either.

CHAP. II.

Containing an Account of Mr. Booth's Fellow Sufferers. BEFORE we return to Amelia, we must detain our reader a little longer with Mr. Booth, in the cuftody of Mr. Bondum, the bailiff, who now informed his prisoner, that he was welcome to the liberty of the house with the other gentlemen.

Booth asked who those gentlemen were. One of 'them, Sir,' fays Mr. Bondum, 'is a very great wri-

ter or author, as they call him. He hath been here ' these five weeks, at the suit of a bookseller, for eleven

pounds, odd money; but he expects to be discharged

in a day or two; for he hath writ out the debt. He ' is now writing for five or fix bookfellers, and he will get you fometimes, when he fits to it, a matter of fifteen shillings a day: for he is a very good pen they fay, but is apt to be idle. Some days he won't write above five hours; but at other times I have known him at it above fixteen.' --- 'Aye!' cries Booth, 'pray' what are his productions? What doth he write?'---Why fometimes,' answered Bondum, 'he writes you history books for your numbers, and sometimes your verses, your poems, what do you call them? And then again he writes news for your newspapers.'---Aye, indeed! he is a most extraordinary man truly. · How doth he get his news here?' --- ' Why he makes it, as he doth your parliament speeches for your magazines. He reads them to us fometimes over a bowl of punch. To be fure, it is all one as if one was in the parliament-house. It is about liberty and freedom, and about the constitution of England. I ' fay nothing for my part, for I will keep my neck out of a halter: but, faith, he makes it out plainly to me, that all matters are not as they should be. am all for liberty, for my part.'--- Is that fo confiftent with your calling, cries Booth. 'I thought, my friend, you had lived by depriving men of their " liberty.' --- 'That's another matter,' cries the bailiff; ' That's all according to law, and in the way of busie ness. To be sure, men must be obliged to pay their debts, or else there would be an end of every thing.' Booth defired the bailiff to give him his opinion of liberty. Upon which he hesitated a moment, and then cried out, 'O, it is a fine thing, it is a very fine thing, and the constitution of England.' Booth told him, that by the old conflitution of England he had heard that men could not be arrested for debt; to which the bailiff answered, that must have been in very bad times. Because as why,' fays he, 'would it not be the ' hardest thing in the world if a man could not arrest another for a just and lawful debt?' Besides, Sir, · you

rupted

you must be mistaken: for how could that ever be?
Is not liberty the constitution of England? Well,
and is not the constitution, as a man may say--whereby the constitution, that is the law and liberty.

and all that----.

Booth had a little mercy upon the poor bailiff, when he found him rounding in this manner, and told him he had made the matter very clear. Booth then proceeded to enquire after the other gentlemen, his fellows in affliction; upon which Bondum acquainted him that one of the prisoners was a poor fellow. 'He calls him-' felf a gentleman,' faid Bondum; 'but I am fure I never faw any thing genteel by him. In a week that he hath been in my house, he hath drank only part of one bottle of wine. I intend to carry him to Newgate within a day or two, if he cannot find bail, which I fuppose he will not be able to do, for every body fays he is an undone man. He hath run out all he hath by loffes in business, and one way or other: and he hath a wife and feven children. Here was the whole family here the other day, all howling together. I never faw such a beggarly crew: I was almost ashamed to see them in my house. I thought they feemed fitter for Bridewell than any other place. To be fire, I do not reckon him as proper company for fuch as you, Sir; but there is another priloner in the house that I dare say you will like very much. · He is, indeed, very much of a gentleman, and spends his money like one. I have had him only three days, and I am afraid he won't stay much longer. They fay, indeed, he is a gamefter; but what is that to me or any one, as long as a man appears as a gentleman? I always love to speak by people as I find. And in my opinion, he is fit company for the greatest · lord in the land; for he hath very good clothes, and money enough. He is not here for debt, but ' upon a judge's warrant for an affault and battery; for the tipstaff locks up here.' The bailiff was thus haranguing, when he was interrupted by the arrival of the attorney, whom the trufty ferjeant had, with the utmost expedition, found out, and dispatched to the relief of his distressed friend. But before we proceed any farther with the captain, we will return to poor Amelia; for whom, considering the situation in which we left her, the good-natured reader may be, perhaps, in no small degree solicitous.

CHAP. III.

THE ferjeant being departed to convey Mrs. Ellison. to the captain, his wife went to fetch Amelia's

chiklren to their mother.

Amelia's concern for the distresses of her husband was aggravated at the sight of her children. 'Good heat vens!' she cried, 'what will, what can become of these poor little wretches! Why have I produced these little creatures, only to give them a share of poverty and misery!' At which words she embraced them eagerly in her arms, and bedewed them both with her tears.

The children's eyes foon overflowed as fast as their mother's, though neither of them knew the cause of her affliction. The little boy, who was the elder, and much the sharper of the two, imputed the agonies of his mother to her illness, according to the account

brought to his father in his presence.

When Amelia became acquainted with the child's apprehensions, she soon satisfied him that she was in a perfect state of health; at which the little thing expressed great satisfaction, and said he was glad she was well again. Amelia told him she had not been in the least disordered. Upon which the innocent cried out, La! how can people tell such fibs! A great tall man-

told my papa you was taken very ill at Mrs. Some-

body's shop; and my poor papa presently ran down tairs, I was afraid he would have broken his neck to

come to you.

O the villains!' cries Mrs. Atkinfon; what a firatagem was here to take away your husband!'

Take



AMELIA.

appel by the arrivation the arrivally, whom the trails with the utipolt expedition, found on a plant of the arrival of the arrival of friend. Here we are the captain, we will see to be a confident of the little of the arrival of the little of the second of the little of the second of the little of the second of the second

CHAP: III.

Trible ker bene departed to convey Mrs. Ellifort Prible ker bene departed to convey Mrs. Ellifort Prible ker bene have been a tetch. Amelia a second of the second prible second of the second of the

the difficults of er hulband was the difficults of er hulband was the difficult of her children. Good her statement will are can become of the statement will be a fixed to give them a fixed of the words fire entraces. It is not the words fire entraces to give them both with

the cause of her the ca

All more

e due l'ordona violent page de la company de

The company here to extend on a song or a song of

COOKE'S POCKET EDITION OF SELECT NOVELS.

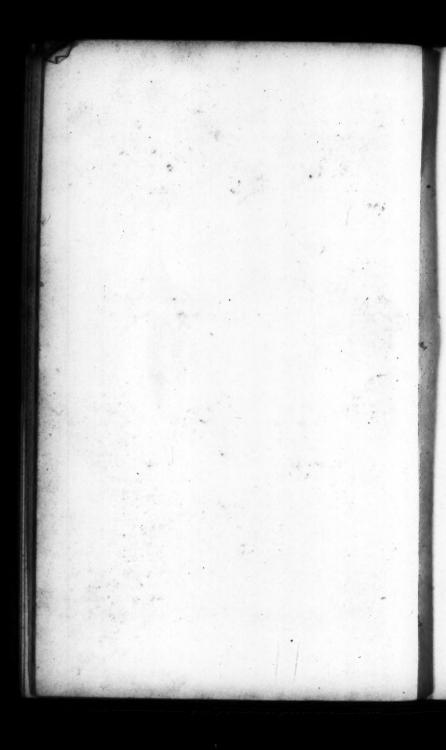


B Owhould dal

Engrav'd for C. Ooks, durant se Bow.

3.1793.

T. Smooden a



Take away!' answered the child: what, hath any body taken away papa? Surely that naughty fibbing

man hath not taken away papa?"

Amelia begged Mrs. Atkinson to fay something to her children, for that her spirits were overpowered. She then threw herfelf into a chair, and gave a full vent to a paffion almost too strong for her delicate constitution.

The scene that followed, during some minutes, is beyoud my power of description; I must beg the readers hearts to fuggest it to themselves. The children hung on the mother, whom they endeavoured in vain to comfort; as Mrs. Atkinson did in vain attempt to pacify them, telling them all would be well, and they would foon fee their papa again.

At length, partly by the persuasions of Mr. Atkinfon, partly from confideration of her little ones, and more, perhaps, from the relief which she had acquired

by her tears, Amelia became a little composed.

Nothing worth notice passed in this miserable company from this time till the return of Mrs. Ellison from the bailiff's house; and to draw out scenes of wretchedness to too great a length, is a task very uneasy to the writer, and for which none but readers of a most gloomy complexion will think themselves ever obliged to his labours.

At length Mrs. Ellison arrived, and entered the room with an air of gaiety rather misbecoming the occasion. When she had seated herself in a chair, she told Amelia that the captain was very well, and in good spirits, and that he earnestly defired her to keep up her's. 'Come, Madam,' faid she, 'don't be discon-' folate; I hope we shall foon be able to get him out of his troubles. The debts, indeed, amount to more · than I expected; however, ways must be found to redeem him. He must own himself guilty of some rashness in going out of the verge, when he knew to what he was liable; but that is not to be remedied.

If he had followed my advice, this had not happened;

· but men will be headstrong. VOL. II. 40.

'I cannot bear this,' cries Amelia; shall I hear that best of creatures blamed for his tenderness to me!

' Well, I will not blame him,' answered Mrs. Ellifon; 'I am fure I propose nothing but to serve him: and if you will do as much to serve him yourself, he will not long be a. prisoner.'

' I do?' cries Amelia; 'Oh, heavens! is there a

thing upon earth---'

' Yes, there is a thing upon earth,' faid Mrs. Ellifon, 'and a very easy thing too: and yet I will venture my life you start when I propose it. And yet when I consider that you are a woman of understanding, I know not why I should think so; for sure vou have too much good sense to imagine that you can cry your husband out of prison. It this would have done, I fee you have almost cried your eyes out already. And yet you may do the business by a much · pleafanter way than by crying and bawling.

What do you mean, Madam?' cries Amelia.
For my part, I cannot guess your meaning.'

Before I tell you, then, Madam,' answered Mrs. Ellison, 'I must inform you, if you do not already know it, that the captain is charged with actions to the amount of near five hundred pounds. I am fure I would willingly be his bail; but I know my bail would not be taken for that fum. You must consider, therefore, Madam, what chance you have of redeeming him; unless you chuse, as perhaps some " wives would, that he should lie all his life in prison." At these words Amelia discharged a flood of tears,

and gave every mark of the most frantic grief. Why there, now, cries Mrs. Ellifon; while you will indulge these extravagant passions, how can · you be capable of liftening to the voice of reason? I ! know I am a fool in concerning myfelf thus with the affairs of others. I know the thankless office I undertake; and yet I love you fo, my dear Mrs. Booth, that I cannot bear to see you afflicted, and I would

comfort you, if you would fuffer me. Let me beg

you to make your mind eafy; and within these two days I will engage to fet your husband at liberty.

' Hark'e, child : only behave like a woman of spirit this evening, and keep your appointment notwithflanding what hath happened, and I am convinced there is one who hath the power and the will to ferve

vou."

at

i-

1:

10

a

i-

1-

et

1-

e.

n e

-

h

Mrs. Ellison spoke the latter part of her speech in a whitper; fo that Mrs. Atkinfon, who was then engaged with the children, might not hear her; but Amelia answered aloud, and faid, 'What appointment

would you have me keep this evening?"

Nay, nay, if you have forgot,' cries Mrs. Ellison, I will tell you more another time; but come, will you go home? My dinner is ready by this time, and you shall dine with me.'

"Talk not to me of dinners,' cries Amelia; 'my

fromach is too full already.'

Nay, but, dear Madam,' answered Mrs. Ellison, · let me befeech you to go home with me !--- I do not care, fays the, whifpering, to fpeak before tome folks.'

'I have no fecret, Madam, in the world,' replied Amelia aloud, 'which I would not communicate to this lady; for I shall always acknowledge the highest obligations to her for the fecrets she hath imparted " to me."

' Madam,' faid Mrs. Ellison, 'I do not interfere with obligations, I am glad the lady hath obliged you · fo much; and I wish all people were equally mindful of obligations. I hope I have omitted no opportu-' nity of endeavouring to oblige Mrs. Booth, as well

as I have fome other folks.'

' If, by other folks, Madam, you mean me,' cries Mrs. Atkinson, 'I confess, I fincerely believe you in-' tended the fame obligation to us both; and I have the pleasure to think it is owing to me that this lady is not as much obliged to you as I am.'

· I protest;

I protest, Madam, I can hardly guess your meaning, faid Mrs. Ellison. Do you really intend to

affront me, Madam?'

I intend to preferve innocence and virtue, if it be in my power, Madam,' answered the other: ' and fure nothing but the most eager resolution to destroy it, could induce you to mention fuch an appointment at

" fuch a time."

I did not expect this treatment from you, Madam,' cries Mrs. Ellison: ' fuch ingratitude I could not have believed, had it been reported to me by any other.'

Such impudence,' answered Mrs. Atkinson, 'must exceed, I think, all belief; but when women once abandon that modesty which is the characteristic of their sex,

they feldom fet any bounds to their affurance.'

' I could not have believed this to have been in human anature,' cries Mrs. Ellison. 'Is this the woman whom I have fed, have cloathed, have supported? who

owes to my charity, and my intercessions, that she is onot at this day deflitute of all the necessaries of life!

'I own it all,' answered Mrs. Atkinson: 'and I s add the favour of a masquerade-ticket to the number. Could I have thought, Madam, that you would, be-

fore my face, have asked another lady to go to the fame place, with the fame man! But I ask your

pardon; I impute rather more assurance to you than you are mistress of. You have endeavoured to keep

the affignation a fecret from me; and it was by mere

s accident only that I discovered it, unless there are · fome guardian angels that in general protect inno-

cence and virtue, though I may fay I have not al-

ways found them so watchful.'

' Indeed, Madam,' faid Mrs. Ellison, ' you are not worth my answer, nor will I stay a moment longer

with such a person .--- So, Mrs. Booth, you have your choice, Madam, whether you will go with me, or

remain in the company of this lady.'

' If so, Madam, answered Mrs. Booth, 'I shall not

be long in determining to stay where I am.'

Mrs.

Mrs. Ellison then casting a look of great indignation at both the ladies, made a short speech full of invectives against Mrs. Atkinson, and not without oblique hints of ingratitude against poor Amelia; after which, she burst out of the room, and out of the house; and made haste to her own home, in a condition of mind to which fortune, without guilt, cannot, I believe, re-

duce any one.

n

t

e

Indeed, how much the superiority of misery is on the fide of wickedness, may appear to ever reader who will compare the present situation of Amelia with that of Mrs. Ellison. Fortune had attacked the former with almost the highest degree of her malice. She was involved in a scene of most exquisite distress; and her husband, her principal comfort, torn violently from her arms; yet her forrow, however exquifite, was all foft and tender; nor was fle without many confolations. Her case, however hard, was not absolutely desperate: for scarce any condition of fortune can be so. Art and industry, chance and friends, have often relieved the most distressed circumstances, and converted them into opulence. In all these she had hopes on this side the grave, and perfect virtue and innocence gave her the strongest assurances on the other; whereas, in the bosom of Mrs. Ellison all was storm and tempest; anger, revenge, fear, and pride, like fo many raging furies, possessed her mind, and tortured her with disappointment and shame. Loss of reputation, which is generally irreparable, was to be her lot: loss of friends is of this the certain consequence: all on this side the grave appeared dreary and comfortless; and endless mifery, on the other, closed the gloomy prospect.

Hence, my worthy reader, confole thyfelf, that however few of the other good things of life are thy lot, the best of all things, which is innocence, is always within thy own power; and though fortune may make thee often unhappy, she can never make thee compleatly and irreparably miserable without thy own consent.

0 3

CHAP,

viour of Colonel James. TTHEN Mrs. Elliton was departed, Mrs. Atkinfon began to apply all her art to foothe and comfort

Amelia, but was presently prevented by her. I am a hamed, dear Madam,' faid Amelia, ' of having indulged my affliction fo much at your expence. · fuddenness of the occasion is my only excuse; for had I had time to fummon my resolution to my assistance, I hope I am mistress of more patience than you have hitherto feen me exert. I know, Madam, in my unwarrantable excesses I have been guilty of many transgressions. First, against that Divine will and pleafure, without whose permission at least no human accident can happen; in the next place, Madam, if any thing can aggravate fuch a fault, I have transgreffed the laws of friendship, as well as decency, in throwing upon you some part of the load of my f grief; and again, I have finned against common sense, which should teach me, instead of weakly and heavily lamenting my misfortunes, to rouze all my spirits to remove them. In this light, I am shocked at my own folly, and am refolved to leave my children under your care, and go directly to my husband. may comfort him; I may affift him; I may relieve him. There is nothing now too difficult for me to

" undertake."

158

Mrs. Atkinfon greatly approved and complimented her friend on all the former part of her speech, except what related to herfelf, on which the spoke very civilly, and I believe with great truth; but as to her going to her husband, she endeavoured to dissuade her, at least fhe begged her to defer it for the present, and till the ferjeant returned home. She then reminded Amelia, that it was now past five in the afternoon, and that she had not taken any refreshment but a dish of tea the wholeday, and defired the would give her leave to procure her a chick, or any thing she liked better, for her dinner. Amelia

a-

on

rt

m 1.

ie

dI

re

1-

-

f

-

n

y

0

Amelia thanked her friend, and said she would sit down with her to whatever she pleased. 'But if I do not eat,' said she, 'I would not have you impute it to any thing but want of appetite: for I assure you, all things are equally indifferent to me. I am more folicitous about these poor little things, who have not been used to fast so long. Heaven knows what may hereafter be their sate!'

Mrs. Atkinfon bid her hope the best, and then re-

And now arrived a fervant from Mrs. James, with an invitation to Captain Booth and his lady, to dine with the colonel the day after the next. This a little perplexed Amelia; but after a fhort confideration she dispatched an answer to Mrs. James, in which she concilely informed her of what had happened.

The honest ferjeant, who had been on his legs almost the whole day, now returned, and brought Amelia a short letter from her husband; in which he gave her the most solemn assurances of his health and spirits, and begged her, with great earnestness, to take care to preserve her own; which if she did, he said he had no doubt but that they should shortly be happy. He added something of hopes from my lord, with which Mrs. Ellison had amused him; and which served only to destroy the comfort that Amelia received from the rest of his letter.

Whilst Amelia, the serjeant, and his lady, were engaged in a cold collation, for which purpose a cold chick was procured from the tavern for the ladies, and two pounds of cold beef for the serjeant, a violent knocking was heard at the door; and presently afterwards Colonel James entered the room. After proper compliments had past, the colonel told Amelia, that her letter was brought to Mrs. James while they were at table, and that on her shewing it him, he had immediately rose up, made an apology to his company, and took a chair to her. He spoke to her with great tender-

ness on the occasion, and defired her to make herself easy; affuring her, that he would leave nothing in his power undone to serve her husband. He then gave her an invitation, in his wife's name, to his own house, in

the most pressing manner.

Amelia returned him very hearty thanks for all his kind offers; but begged to decline that of an apartment in his house. She said, as she could not leave her children, so neither could she think of bringing such a trouble with her into his family; and though the colonel gave her many assurances that her children, as well as herfelf, would be very welcome to Mrs. James, and even betook himself to entreaties, she still persisted obstinately in her refusal.

In real truth, Amelia had taken a vast affection for Mrs. Atkinson, the comfort of whose company she could not bear to be deprived of in her distress; nor to exchange it for that of Mrs. James, to whom she had

lately conceived no little diflike.

The colonel, when he found he could not prevail with Amelia to accept his invitation, defifted from any farther folicitations. He then took a bank bill of fifty pounds from his pocket book, and faid, 'You will pardon me, dear Madam, if I chuse to impute vour refusal of my house rather to a dislike of my wife, who I will not pretend to be the most agreeable of women --- (all men,' faid he, fighing, have not Captain Booth's fortune!) --- than to any aversion or anger to me. I must insist upon it, therefore, to " make your present habitation as easy to you as posfible. I hope, Madam, you will not deny me this happiness; I beg you will honour me with the acceptance of this trifle.' He then put the note into her hand, and declared that the honour of touching it was worth a hundred times that fum.

I protest, Colonel James, cried Amelia, blushing, I know not what to do or say, your goodness so greatly confounds me. Can I, who am so well acquainted with the many great obligations Mr. Booth already hath

s hath to your generofity, confent that you should add

f more to a debt we never can pay?----

The colonel stopped her short, protesting that she misplaced the obligation; for that if to confer the highest happiness was to oblige, he was obliged to her acceptance. 'And I do assure you, Madam,' said he, if this trisling sum, or a much larger, can contribute to your ease, I shall consider myself as the happiest man upon earth, in being able to supply it; and you, Madam, my greatest benefactor in receiving it.'

Amelia then put the note in her pocket; and they entered into a conversation, in which many civil things were said on both sides: but what was chiefly worth remark was, that Amelia had her husband almost constantly in her mouth, and the colonel never mentioned him. The former seemed desirous to lay all obligations, as much as possible, to the account of her husband; and the latter endeavoured, with the utmost delicacy, to infinuate that her happiness was the main, and, indeed, only point, which he had in view.

Amelia had made no doubt, at the colonel's first appearance, but that he intended to go directly to her husband. When he dropped, therefore, a hint of his intention to visit him next morning, she appeared visibly shocked at the delay. The colonel perceiving this, faid, 'However inconvenient it may be, yet, Madam, ' if it will oblige you, or if you defire it, I will even go to-night.' Amelia answered: 'My husband would' be far from defiring to derive any good from your inconvenience, but if you put it to me, I must be excufed for faying, I delire nothing more in the world than to fend him fo great a comfort as I know he will receive from the presence of such a friend.'--- Then, ' to flew you, Madam,' cries the colonel, 'that I defire nothing more in the world than to give you pleafure, I will go to him immediately.'

Amelia then bethought herself of the serjeant; and told the colonel, his old acquaintance Atkinson, whom he had known at Gibraltar, was then in the house, and would conduct him to the place. The ferjeant was immediately called in, paid his respects to the colonel, and was acknowledged by him. They both immediately set forward; Amelia to the utmost of her power

preffing their departure.

Mrs. Atkinson now returned to Amelia, and was by her acquainted with the colonel's late generosity; for her heart so boiled over with gratitude, that she could not conceal the ebullition. Amelia likewise gave her friend a full narrative of the colonel's former behaviour and friendship to her husband, as well abroad as in England; and ended with declaring, that she believed him to be the most generous man upon earth.

Mrs. Atkinson agreed with Amelia's conclusion; and said, she was glad to hear there was any such man. They then proceeded with the children to the tea-table, where panegyric, and not scandal, was the topic of their conversation; and of this panegyric, the colonel was the subject, both the ladies seeming to vie with each other in celebrating the praises of his goodness.

CHAP. V.
Comments upon Authors.

HAVING left Amelia in as comfortable a fituation as could possibly be expected, her immediate distresses relieved, and her heart filled with great hopes from the friendship of the colonel; we will now return to Booth, who, when the attorney and serjeant had left him, received a visit from that great author of whom honourable mention is made in our second chapter.

Booth, as the reader may be pleased to remember, was a pretty good master of the classics; for his sather, though he designed his son for the army, did not think it necessary to breed him up a blockhead. He did not, perhaps, imagine that a competent share of Latin and Greek would make his son either a pedant or a coward. He considered likewise, probably, that the life of a soldier is in general a life of idleness; and might think that the spare hours of an officer in country quarters would be as well employed with a book, as in saunter-

ing about the fireets, loitering in a coffee-house, sotting in a tavern, or in laying schemes to debauch and

ruin a set of harmless, ignorant country girls.

1-

1,

1-

er

y

or

d

er

ır

in

d

1.

2,

f

ŀ

b

n

n

As Booth was, therefore, what might well be called, in this age at leaft, a man of learning, he began to difcourse our author on subjects of literature. 'I think, Sir,' says he, 'that Doctor Swift hath been generally allowed, by the critics in this kingdom, to be the greatest master of humour that ever wrote. Indeed I allow him to have possessed most admirable talents of this kind; and if Rabelais was his master, I think he proves the truth of the common Greek proverb, that the scholar is often superior to the master, As to Cervantes, I do not think we can make any just comparison; for though Mr. Pope compliments him with sometimes taking Cervantes' serious air---' I remember the passage,' cries the author:

O thou, whatever title please thine ear,
Dean, Drapier, Bickerstaff, or Gulliver;

Whether you take Cervantes' ferious air,

Or laugh and shake in Rabelais' easy-chair.' ' You are right, Sir,' faid Booth; but though I fhould agree that the doctor hath fometimes conde-' scended to imitate Rabelais, I do not remember to have feen in his works the least attempt in the manoner of Cervantes. But there is one in his own way, and whom I am convinced he studied above all others: ' you guels, I believe, I am going to name Lucian. This author, I fay, I am convinced he followed: but I think he followed him at a distance; as, to fay the truth, every other writer of this kind hath done in my opinion; for none, I think, hath yet equalled ' him. I agree, indeed, entirely with Mr. Moile, in his discourse on the age of the Philopatris, when he ' gives him the epithet of the Incomparable Lucian and incomparable I believe, he will remain, as long as the language in which he wrote shall endure. What an inimitable piece of humour is his Cock! "I remember it very well, cries the author; his · Itory

ftory of a Cock and a Bull is excellent.' Booth ftas red at this, and asked the author what he meant by the bull. 'Nay,' answered he, 'I don't know very well, upon my foul. It is a long time fince I read him. I learned him all over at school, I have not read him much fince.'--- And pray, Sir,' faid he, how do you like his Pharfalia? Don't you think " Mr. Rowe's translation a very fine one!' Booth replied, 'I believe we are talking of different authors.' The Pharfalia which Mr. Rowe translated, was written by Lucan; but I have been speaking of Lucian, a Greek writer, and, in my opinion, the greatest in the humorous way that ever the world produced.'---· Ave!' cries the author, he was indeed so, a very excellent writer, indeed. I fancy a translation of him would ' fell very well.' I do not know, indeed,' cries Booth. A good translation of him would be a valuable book. · I have seen a wretched one, published by Mr. Dryden, but translated by others, who in many places have ' misunderstood Lucian's meaning, and have no where · preserved the spirit of the original.'-- That is great pity,' fays the author. 'Pray, Sir, is he well tranflated into French?' Booth answered, he could not tell; but that he doubted it very much, having never feen a good version into that language, out of the Greek. 'To confeis the truth, I believe, faid he, the French translators have generally confulted the Latin only; which, in some of the few Greek writers I have read, is tolerably bad. And as the English translators for the most part, pursue the French, we · may eafily guels, what spirit those copies of bad copies must preserve of the original.

Egad, you are a shrewd guesser,' cries the author.
I am glad the booksellers have not your sagacity.
But how should it be otherwise, considering the price

they pay by the sheet? The Greek, you will allow, is a hard language; and there are few gentlemen that write, who can read it without a good lexicon. Now,

of words, a gentleman would not get bread and cheefe by his work. If one was to be paid, indeed, as Mr.

Pope was for his Homer----Pray, Sir, don't you

think that the best translation in the world?'

Indeed, Sir, cries Booth, I think, though it is ceratainly a noble paraphrafe, and of itself a fine poem, yet,

in forme places, it is no translation at all. In the very

beginning, for instance, he hath not rendered the true force of the author. Homer invokes his Muse in the

five first lines of the Iliad; and, at the end of the fifth,

· he gives his reason---

2:

y

V

id

ot

e,

k

2.

5.

-

1,

11

d

1.

.

1,

t

t

14

ė

é

ť

' Διὸς δ' ἐτελείελο βελή.

For all these things,' says he, 'were brought about by the decree of Jupiter; and, therefore, he supposes their true sources are known only to the deities.

Now, the translation takes no more notice of the ΔE_2

than if no fuch word had been there.'

Very possibly, answered the author; it is a long time since I read the original. Perhaps, then, he

followed the French translations. I observe, indeed,

he talks much in the notes of Madam Dacier, and

. Monfieur Eustathius.'

Booth had now received conviction enough of his friend's knowledge of the Greek language; without attempting, therefore, to fet him right, be made a fudden transition to the Latin. 'Pray, Sir,' said he, 'as you' have mentioned Rowe's translation of the Pharsalia, do you remember how he hath rendered that passage.

in the character of Cato?

· ----Venerisque buic maximus usus

· Progenies; urbi pater est, urbique maritus.

• For I apprehend that passage is generally misunder• stood.

'I really do not remember,' answered the author.
'Pray, Sir, what do you take to be the meaning:'

'I apprehend, Sir,' replied Booth, 'that by these words, urbi pater est, urbique maritus, Cato is re-Vol. II. 40. P 'presented presented as the father and the husband of the city of

" Rome.

' Very true, Sir,' cries the author; ' very fine indeed! Not only the father of his country, but the

husband too; very noble, truly!'

' Pardon me, Sir,' cries Booth ; 'I do not conceive that to have been Lucan's meaning. If you please

' to observe the context: Lucan, having commended the temperance of Cato, in the instances of diet and

clothes, proceeds to venereal pleasures; of which, ' fays the poet, his principal use was procreation; then

he adds, urbi pater eft, urbique maritus; that he be-

came a father and a husband, for the fake only of the city.'

'Upon my word, that's true,' cries the author: 'I did not think of it. It is much finer than the other,

· Urbis pater est --- what is the other? --- aye --- urbis ma-' ritus. It is certainly as you fay, Sir.'

Booth was by this pretty well fatisfied of the author's profound learning; however, he was willing to try him a little farther. He asked him, therefore, what was his opinion of Lucan in general, and in what class of writers he ranked him.

The author stared a little at this question; and, after some hesitation, answered, ' Certainly, Sir, I think

he is a fine writer, and a very great poet.'

' I am very much of the fame opinion,' cries Booth; but where do you class him? next to what poet do

' you place him?'

Let me see,' cries the author, ' where do I class him!---next to whom do I place him!----Aye!----

why!---why---pray, where do you yourfelf place

· him ?'

'Why furely,' cries Booth, 'if he is not to be ' placed in the first rank, with Homer and Virgil, and

Milton; I think clearly, he is at the head of the fecond; before either Statius, or Silius Italicus---

' though I allow to each of these their merits; but, perhaps, an epic poem was beyond the genius of either.

either. I own, I have often thought, if Statius had ventured no farther than Ovid or Claudian, he would have succeeded better; for his Sylvæ are, in my opinion much better than his Thebais.'

I believe, I was of the fame opinion formerly,

faid the author.

of

1-

le

re

le

d

15

n

-

le

I

And for what reason have you altered it?' cries Booth.

"I have not altered it," answered the author; "but, to tell you the truth, I have not any opinion at all about these matters at present. I do not trouble my head much with poetry: for there is no encouragement to fuch studies in this age. It is true, indeed, I have now and then wrote a poem or two for the magazines; but I never intend to write any more; for a gentleman is not paid for his time. A sheet is a fleet with the bookfellers; and, whether it be in profe or verse, they make no difference; though cerstainly there is as much difference to a gentleman in the work, as there is to a taylor, between making a plain and a laced fuit. Rhimes are difficult things; they are stubborn things, Sir. I have been sometimes longer in tagging a couplet, than I have been in writing a speech on the side of the opposition. which hath been read with great applause all over " the kingdom."

I am glad you are pleased to confirm that,' cries Booth: 'for I protest, it was an entire secret to me till this day. I was so perfectly ignorant, that I thought the speeches, published in the magazines, were really

" made by the members themselves."

Some of them, and I believe I may without vanity fay the best,' cries the author, are all the production of my own pen; but, I believe, I shall leave it off soon, unless a sheet of speech will fetch more than it does at present. In truth, the romance writing is the only branch of our business now that is worth following. Goods of that sort have had so much success lately in the market, that a bookseller scarce

cares what he bids for them. And it is certainly the seafiest work in the world; you may write it almost as

fast as you can set pen to paper; and if you interlard it with a little scandal, a little abuse on some living

characters of note, you cannot fail of success.'

' Upon my word, Sir,' cries Booth, ' you have greatly instructed me. I could not have imagined there had been to much regularity in the trade of writing as you are pleased to mention: by what I can perceive, the pen and ink is likely to become the sta-

! ple commodity of the kingdom.'

'Alas, Sir!' answered the author, 'it is overflocked. The market is over-stocked. There is no encouragement to merit, no patrons. I have been these five years soliciting a subscription for my new

translation of Ovid's Metamorphoses; with notes explanatory, historical, and critical; and I have scarce

collected five hundred names yet."

The mention of this translation a little surprized Booth; not only as the author had just declared his intentions to forfake the tuneful muses; but for some other reations, which he had collected from his convertation with our author, he little expected to hear of a propofal to translate any of the Latin poets. He proceeded, therefore, to catechife him a little farther: and by his answers was fully satisfied, that he had the very same acquaintance with Ovid, that he had appeared to have with Lucan.

The author then pulled out a bundle of papers, containing proposals for his subscription, and receipts: and addressing himself to Booth, said, ' Though the s place in which we meet, Sir, is an improper place to folicit favours of this kind; yet, perhaps, it may be in your power to ferve me, if you will charge your pockets with some of these.' Booth was just offering at an excuse, when the bailiff introduced Colonel James and the ferjeant.

The unexpected vifit of a beloved friend to a man in affliction, especially in Mr. Booth's fituation, is a comas d

re.

d

i-

n

-

n

V

e

fort which can scarce be equalled; not barely from the hopes of relief, or redress by his assistance, but as it is an evidence of sincere friendship, which scarce admits of any doubt or suspicion. Such an instance doth, indeed, make a man amends for all ordinary troubles and distresses; and we ought to think ourselves gainers, by having had such an opportunity of discovering, that we are possessed of one of the most valuable of all human possessions.

Booth was so transported at the fight of the colonel, that he dropped the proposals which the author had put into his hand, and burst forth into the highest professions of gratitude to his friend, who behaved very properly on his side, and said every thing which became the

mouth of a friend on the occasion. It is true, indeed, he feemed not moved equally either with Booth or the ferjeant, both whose eyes watered at the scene. In truth, the colonel, though a very generous man, had not the least grain of tenderneis in his disposition. His mind was formed of those firm materials, of which Nature formerly hammered out the Stoic, and upon which the forrows of no man living could make an impression. A man of this temper, who doth not much value danger, will fight for the person he calls his friend; and the man that hath but little value for his money will give it him; but fuch friendship is never to be absolutely depended on; for whenever the favourite passion interpoles with it, it is fure to subside, and vanish into air. Whereas the man, whose tender disposition really feels the miseries of another, will endeavour to relieve them for his own fake; and, in such a mind, friendship will often get the superiority over every other passion.

But from whatever motive it sprung, the colonel's behaviour to Booth seemed truly amiable; and so it appeared to the author, who took the first occasion to applaud it in a very florid oration; which the reader, when he recollects that he was a speech maker by profession will not be surprized at; nor, perhaps, will be

much more furprized, that he foon after took an occafion of clapping a propofal into the colonel's hands; holding, at the fame time, a receipt very visible in his own.

The colonel received both, and gave the author a guinea in exchange, which was double the fum mentioned in the receipt; for which the author made a low bow, and very politely took his leave, faying, 'I fuppose, gentlemen, you may have some private builf ness together. I heartily wish a speedy end to your consinement; and I congratulate you on the possessing so great, so noble, and so generous a friend.'

CHAP. VI.

Which inclines rather to Satire than Panegyric.

THE colonel had the curiofity to ask Booth the name of the gentleman who, in the vulgar language, had struck or taken him in for a guinea, with so much ease and dexterity. Booth answered, he did not know his name; all that he knew of him was, that he was the most impudent and illiterate fellow he had ever seen; and that, by his own account, he was the author of most of the wonderful productions of the age. 'Pershaps,' said he, 'it may look uncharitable in me to blame you for your generosity; but I am continued the fellow hath not the least merit or capacity; and you have subscribed to the most horrid trash that ever was published!'

"I care not a farthing what he publishes," cries the colonel. "Heaven forbid I should be obliged to read

· half the nonfense I have subscribed to!'

But, don't you think,' faid Booth, ' that by fuch indifcriminate encouragement of authors you do a real mischief to society? By propagating the subfcriptions of such fellows, people are tired out, and with-hold their contributions to men of real merit; and, at the same time, you are contributing to fill the world, not only with nonsense, but with all the scurrility, indecency, and profaneness, with which

the age abounds; and with which all bad writers

· fupply the defect of genius.'

'Pugh!' cries the colonel, 'I never confider these matters. Good or bad, it is all one to me; but there's an acquaintance of mine, and a man of great wit too, that thinks the worst the best, as they are the surest to make him laugh.'

'I ask your pardon, Sir,' says the sejeant; 'but I wish your honour would consider your own affairs a

flittle; for it grows late in the evening.'

'The ferjeant fays true,' answered the colonel.

What is it you intend to do?'

Faith, colonel, I know not what I shall do. My affairs seem so irreparable, that I have been driving them, as much as possibly I could, from my mind. If I was to suffer alone, I think I could bear them with some philosophy; but when I consider who are to be the sharers in my fortune---the dearest of children, and the best, the worthiest, and the noblest of women---pardon me, my dear friend! these sensations are above me; they convert me into a woman; they drive me to despair, to madness.

The colonel advised him to command himself; and told him, this was not the way to retrieve his fortune.

As to me, my dear Booth, 'iaid he, 'you know'you may command me as far as is really within my

power.'

Booth answered eagerly, that he was so far from expecting any more favours from the colonel, that he had resolved not to let him know any thing of his missortune. 'No, my dear friend,' cries he, 'I am too i much obliged to you already;' and then burst into many fervent expressions of gratitude; till the colonel himself stopped him, and begged him to give an account of the debt or debts for which he was detained in that horrid place.

Booth answered, he could not be very exact; but he feared it was upwards of four hundred pounds.

It is but three hundred pounds, indeed, Sir, cries

ferjeant; ' if you can raise three hundred pounds, you

f are a free man this moment.'

Booth, who did not apprehend the generous meaning of the ferjeant, as well as, I believe, the reader will, answered, he was mistaken; that he had computed his debts, and they amounted to upwards of four hundred pounds; nay, that the bailiff had shewn him writs for above that sum.

Whether your debts are three or four hundred, cries the colonel, the present business is to give bail only; and then you will have some time to try your

friends. I think you might get a company abroad, and then I would advance the money on the fecurity of half your pay; and, in the mean time, I will be one

of your bail with all my heart.'

While Booth poured forth his gratitude for all this kindness, the serjeant ran down stairs for the bailiff, and shortly after returned with him into the room.

The bailiff being informed that the colonel offered to be bail for his prisoner, answered a little surlily, Well, Sir, and who will be the other? You know, I suppose, there must be two; and I must have time

" to enquire after them."

The colonel replied, 'I believe, Sir, I am well known to be responsible for a much larger sum than your demand on this gentleman; but if your forms require two, I suppose the serjeant here will do for

" the other."

'I don't know the ferjeant, nor you either, Sir,' cries Bondum; 'and if you propose yourselves bail for the gentleman, I must have time to enquire after you.'

'You need very little time to enquire after me,' fays the colonel, 'for I can fend for several of the law, whom I suppose you know, to satisfy you; but con-

fider, it is very late.'

'Yes, Sir,' answered Bondum; 'I do consider it is too late for the captain to be bailed to-night.'

What do mean by too late?' cries the colonel.

I mean,

I mean, Sir, that I must search the office, and that is now shut up; for if my lord mayor and the court of aldermen would be bound for him, I would not

discharge him till I had searched the office.'

'How, Sir,' cries the colonel; 'hath the law of England no more regard for the liberty of the fubject, than to fuffer fuch fellows as you to detain a man in custody for debt, when he can give undeniable security?'

Don't fellow me,' faid the bailiff; ' I am as good a fellow as yourfelf, I believe, though you have that

' ribband in your hat there.'

'Do you know who you are speaking to?' said the serjeant. 'Do you know you are talking to a colo-

" nel of the army?"

'What's a colonel of the army to me?' cries the bailiff. 'I have had as good as he in my custody before now.'

And a member of parliament,' cries the ferjeant.

'Is the gentleman a member of parliament? Well,
and what harm have I faid? I am fure I meant no
harm; and if his honour is offended, I ask his pardon: to be fure, his honour must know that the sheriff is answerable for all the writs in the office, though
they were never so many, and I am answerable to the
shevist. I am sure the captain can't say that I have
shewn him any manner of incivility since he hath been
here.--And I hope, honourable Sir,' cries he, turning to the colonel, 'you don't take any thing amis
that I said, or meant by way of disrespect, or any
such matter. I did not, indeed, as the gentleman
here says, know who I was speaking to; but I did
not say any thing uncivil, as I know of, and I hope

no offence.'
The colonel was more eafily pacified than might have been expected; and told the bailiff, that if it was against the rules of law to discharge Mr. Booth that evening, he must be contented. He then addressed himself to his friend, and began to prescribe comfort

and patience to him, faying, he must rest satisfied with his confinement that night, and the next morning he

promised to visit him again.

Booth answered, that as for himself, the lying one night in any place was very little worth his regard. You and I, my dear friend, have both spent our evening in a worse situation than I shall in this house. All my concern is for my poor Amelia, whose sufferings on account of my absence I know, and I feel with unspeakable tenderness. Could I be assured she was tolerably easy, I could be contented in chains, or

in a dungeon.'

Give yourself no concern on her account,' said the colonel. I will wait on her myself, though I break an engagement for that purpose, and will give her such assurances as I am convinced will make her per-

feetly eafy.'

Booth embraced his friend, and weeping over him, paid his acknowledgments with tears for all his goodness. In words, indeed, he was not able to thank him; for gratitude, joined with his other passions, almost choaked him, and stopped his utterance.

After a fhort scene, in which nothing passed worth recounting, the colonel bid his friend good-night; and leaving the serjeant with him, made the best of his way

back to Amelia.

CHAP. VII.

Worthy a very ferious Perusal.

THE colonel found Amelia fitting very disconsolate with Mrs. Atkinson. He entered the room with an air of great gaicty, assured Amelia that her husband was perfectly well, and that he hoped the next day he

would again be with her.

Amelia was a little comforted at this account; and vented many grateful expressions to the colonel for his unparalleled friendship, as she was pleased to call it. She could not, however, help giving way soon after to a sigh at the thoughts of her husband's bondage, and de-

clared that night would be the longest she had ever known.

'This lady, Madam,' cries the colonel, 'must endeavour to make it shorter; and if you will give me
leave, I will join in the same endeavour.' Then,
after some more consolatory speeches, the colonel attempted to give a gay turn to the discourse; and said,
I was engaged to have spent this evening disagreeably at Ranelagh, with a set of company I did not
like. How vastly am I obliged to you, dear Mrs.
Booth, that I pass it so infinitely more to my satisfaction.'

'Indeed, colonel,' faid Amelia, 'I am convinced that to a mind so rightly turned as yours, there must be a much sweeter relish in the highest offices of friendship, than in any pleasures which the gayest

public places can afford.'

he

ne

ır

e.

ef

e r

'Upon my word, Madam,' faid the colonel, 'you'
now do me no more than justice. I have, and always
had, the utmost indisference for such pleasures. Indeed, I hardly allow them worthy of that name, or,
if they are so at all, it is in a very low degree. In
my opinion, the highest friendship must always lead
us to the highest pleasure.'

Here Amelia entered into a long differtation on friendship, in which she pointed several times directly at

the colonel as the hero of her tale.

The colonel highly applauded all her fentiments; and when he could not avoid taking the compliment to himself, he received it with a most respectful bow. He then tried his hand likewise at description, in which he found means to repay all Amelia's panegyric in kind. This, though he did with all possible delicacy, yet a curious observer might have been apt to suspect that it was chiefly on her account that the colonel had avoided the masquerade.

In discourses of this kind they passed the evening, till it was very late, the colonel never offering to stir from his chair before the clock had struck one; when he thought, perhaps, that decency obliged him to take his leave.

As foon as he was gone, Mrs. Atkinson said to Mrs. Booth, 'I think, Madam, you told me this after'noon, that the colonel was married.'

Amelia answered, she did so.

I think, likewise, Madam,' said Mrs. Atkinson,
you was acquainted with the colonel's lady.'

Amelia answered, that she had been extremely inti-

mate with her abroad.

Is she young, and handsome?' faid Mrs. Atkinfon. 'In short, pray, was it a match of love or con-'venience?'

Amelia answered, entirely of love, she believed, on his side: for that the lady had little or no fortune.

'I am very glad to hear it,' faid Mrs. Atkinson:
for I am sure the colonel is in love with somebody.

I think, I never faw a more luscious picture of love drawn than that which he was pleased to give us as

the portraiture of friendship. I have read, indeed,

of Pylades and Orestes, Damon and Pythias, and

other great friends of old; nay, I fometimes flatter myself that I am capable of being a friend myself;

but as for that fine, foft, tender, delicate passion,

which he was pleased to describe, I am convinced there must go a he and a she to the composition.

'Upon my word, my dear, you are mistaken,' cries Amelia. 'If you had known the friendship which

hath always fubfifted between the colonel and my husband, you would not imagine it possible for any

description to exceed it. Nay, I think his behaviour this very day is sufficient to convince you.

'I own what he hath done to-day hath great merit,' faid Mrs. Atkinfon; 'and yet from what he hath faid

to-night---you will pardon me, dear Madam; perhaps I am too quick-fighted in my observations, nay,

' I am afraid I am even impertinent.'

'Fie upon it,' cries Amelia; 'how can you talk in 'that strain! Do you imagine I expect ceremony? 'Pray

Pray fpeak what you think with the utmost free-

'Did he not then,' faid Mrs. Atkinson, ' repeat the words, the finest anoman in the world, more than

once? Did he not make use of an expression which might have become the mouth of Oroondates him-

felf? If I remember, the words were these: that had

he been Alexander the Great, he should have thought tit more glory to have wiped off a tear from the bright

ti more glory to have wiped off a tear from the bright eyes of Statira, than to have conquered fifty worlds.

'Did he say so?' cries Amelia. 'I think he did fay something like it; but my thoughts were so full

of my husband that I took little notice. But what would you infer from what he said? I hope you don't

think he is in love with me!'

'I hope he doth not think to himself,' answered Mrs. Atkinson; 'though when he mentioned the bright eyes of Statira, he fixed his own eyes on yours with

" the most languishing air I ever beheld."

Amelia was going to answer, when the serjeant arrived, and then she immediately fell to enquiring after her husband; and received such satisfactory answers to all her many questions concerning him, that she expressed great pleasure. These ideas so possessed her mind, that without once casting her thoughts on any other matters, she took her leave of the serjeant and his lady, and repaired to bed to her children, in a room which Mrs. Atkinson had provided her in the same house; where we will at present wish her a good night.

CHÁP. VIII.

Confishing of grave Matters.

WHILE innocence and cheerful hope, in spite of the malice of fortune, closed the eyes of the gentle Amelia on her homely bed, and she enjoyed a sweet and profound sleep; the colonel lay restless all night on his down: his mind was affected with a kind of ague sit; sometimes scorched up with flaming desires, and again chilled with the coldest despair.

There is a time, I think, according to one of our Vol. II. 40.

poets, when lust and envy sleep. This, I suppose is, when they are well gorged with the food they most delight in; but while either of these hunger,

Nor poppy, nor mandragora, Nor all the drowfy fyrups of the East, Will ever medicine them to slumber.

The colonel was, at present, unhappily tormented by both these sends. His last evening's conversation with Amelia had done his business effectually. The many kind words she had spoken to him, the many kind looks she had given him, as being, she conceived, the friend and preserver of her husband, had made an entire conquest of his heart. Thus, the very love which she bore him, as the person to whom her little family were to owe their preservation and happiness, inspired him with thoughts of sinking them all in the lowest abys of ruin and misery; and while she smiled with all her sweetness on the supposed friend of her husband, she was converting that friend into his most bitter enemy.

Friendship, take heed; if woman interfere, Be sure the hour of thy destruction's near.

These are the lines of Vanbrugh; and the sentiment is better than the poetry. To say the truth, as a hand-some wife is the cause and cement of many salse friendships, she is often too liable to destroy the real ones.

Thus the object of the colonel's luft very plainly appears; but the object of his envy may be more difficult to discover. Nature and fortune had seemed to strive with a kind of rivalship, which should bestow most on the colonel. The former had given him him person, parts, and constitution, in all which he was superior to almost every other man. The latter had given him rank in life, and riches, both in a very eminent degree. Whom then should this happy man envy? Here, lest ambition should mislead the reader to search the palaces of the great, we will direct him at once to Gray's Inn Lane; where, in a miserable bed, in a miserable room, he will see a miserable broken licutenant, in a miserable condition.

condition, with several heavy debts on his back, and without a penny in his pocket. This, and no other, was the object of the colonel's envy. And why? because this wretch was possessed of the affections of a poor little lamb; which all the vast flocks that were within the power and reach of the colonel, could not prevent that glutton's longing for. And sure this image of the lamb is not improperly adduced on this occasion; for what was the colonel's desire, but to lead this poor lamb, as it were, to the slaughter, in order to purchase a feast of a few days by her final destruction, and to tear her away from the arms of one where she was sure of being fondled and caressed all the days of her life.

While the colonel was agitated with these thoughts, his greatest comfort was, that Amelia and Booth were now separated, and his greatest terror was of their coming again together. From wishes, therefore, he began to meditate designs; and so far was he from any intention of procuring the liberty of his friend, that he began to form schemes of prolonging his confinement, till he could procure some means of sending him away far from her; in which case he doubted not of suc-

ceeding in all he defired.

He was forming this plan in his mind, when a fervant informed him, that one Serjeant Atkinson desired to speak with his honour. The serjeant was immediately admitted, and acquainted the colonel, that if he pleased to go and become bail for Mr. Booth, another unexceptionable housekeeper would be there to join with him. This person the serjeant had procured that morning, and had, by leave of his wife, given him a bond of indemnification for the purpose.

The colonel did not seem so elated with this news as Atkinson expected. On the contrary, instead of making a direct answer to what Atkinson said, the colonel began thus: 'I think, serjeant, Mr. Booth hath told me that you was foster-brother to his lady.

She is really a charming woman, and it is a thousand pities she should ever have been placed in the dreadful

fituation she is now in. There is nothing so filly as for subaltern officers of the army to marry, unless

where they meet with women of very great fortunes

indeed. What can be the event of their marrying otherwise, but entailing misery and beggary on their

wives and their posterity?".

Ah, Sir!' cries the ferjeant, it is too late to think of those matters now. To be fure, my lady might have married one of the top gentlemen in the country;

for the is certainly one of the best, as well as one of

the handfomest women in the kingdom; and if she had been fairly dealt by, would have had a very great

fortune into the bargain. Indeed, she is worthy of the greatest prince in the world; and if I had been

the greatest prince in the world, I should have thought myself happy with such a wife; but she was pleased

to like the lieutenant, and certainly there can be no

' happiness in marriage without liking.'

'Look'e, serjeant,' said the colonel, 'you know very well that I am the lieutenant's friend. I think

· I have shewn myself so.'

'Indeed your honour hath,' quoth the ferjeant,

" more than once, to my knowledge."

But I am angry with him for his imprudence, greatly angry with him for his imprudence; and the more so, as it affects a lady of so much worth.

'She is, indeed, a lady of the highest worth,' cries the serjeant. 'Poor dear lady! I knew her an't please your honour, from her infancy; and the sweetest-

tempered, best natured lady she is, that ever trod on

English ground. I have always loved her as if she was my own fister. Nay, she hath very often called

me brother; and I have taken it to be a greater honour than if I was to be called a general officer.'

What pity it is,' faid the colonel, 'that this worthy creature should be exposed to so much misery by the thoughtless behaviour of a man, who, though I am

his friend, I cannot help faying, hath been guilty of imprudence, at least. Why could he not live upon

6 his

his half-pay? What had he to do to run himfelf

' into debt in this outrageous manner?'

'I wish, indeed,' cries the serjeant, 'he had been a · little more considerative; but I hope this will be a

warning to him.'

' How am I fure of that?' answered the colonel; or what reason is there to expect it? Extravagance is a vice of which men are not so easily cured. I have thought a great deal of this matter, Mr. Serjeant; and upon the most mature deliberation, I am of opionion, that it will be better both for him and his poor

' lady, that he should smart a little more.'

' Your honour, Sir, to be fure, is in the right,' replied the ferjeant; 'but yet, Sir, if you will pardon ' me for speaking, I hope you will be pleased to consider my poor lady's case. She suffers, all this while, as much or more than the lieutenant; for I know her fo well, that I am certain she will never have a mo-' ment's ease till her husband is out of confinement.'

' I know women better than you, ferjeant,' cries the colonel: 'they fometimes place their affections on a ' husband, as children do on their nurse; but they are both to be weaned. I know you, serjeant, to be a fellow of sense as well as spirit, or I should not speak ' fo freely to you; but I took a fancy to you a long ' time ago, and I intend to ferve you; but, first, I ask ' you this question, is your attachment to Mr. Booth, or to his lady?"

' Certainly, Sir,' faid the ferjeant, I must love my · lady best. Not but I have a great affection for the · lieutenant too, because I know my lady hath the fame; and, indeed, he hath been always very good to me, as far as was in his power. A lieutenant, ' your honour knows, can't do a great deal; but I have always found him my friend upon all occasions.'

'You fay true,' cries the colonel; 'a lieutenant can do but little; but I can do much to ferve you, and will too. But let me ask you one question, who was

the lady whom I faw last night with Mrs. Booth at

her lodgings?'

Here the ferjeant blushed, and repeated, 'The lady,

'Aye, a lady; a woman,' cries the colonel, 'who fupped with us last night. She looked rather too much like a gentlewoman for the mistress of a lodging

house.'

The ferjeant's cheeks glowed at this compliment to his wife, and he was just going to own her, when the colonel proceeded: 'I think I never saw in my life so ill-looking, sly, demure a b---. I would give something, methinks, to know who she was.'

I don't know, indeed,' cries the ferjeant, in great

confusion: 'I know nothing about her.'

'I with you would enquire,' faid the colonel, 'and 'let me know her name, and likewife what she is. I have a strange curiosity to know; and let me see you again this evening exactly at seven.'

' And will not your honour, then, go to the lieu-

feenant this morning?' faid Atkinfon.

It is not in my power, answered the colonel; I am engaged another way. Besides, there is no haste in this office. If man will be improved at they must

in this affair. If men will be imprudent, they must fuffer the consequences. Come to me at seven, and

bring me all the particulars you can concerning that

ill-looked jade I mentioned to you, for I am refolved to know who she is. And so, good-morrow to you,

ferjeant; be affored I will take an opportunity to do

fomething for you.'

Though some readers may, perhaps, think the ferjeant not unworthy of the freedom with which the colonel treated him, yet that haughty officer would have been very backward to have condescended to such familiarity with one of his rank, had he not proposed some design from it. In truth, he began to conceive hopes of making the serjeant instrumental to his design on Amelia; in other words, to convert him into a pimp; an office in which the colonel had been served by Atkinfon's fon's betters; and which, as he knew it was in his power very well to reward him, he had no apprehenfion that the ferjeant would decline: an opinion which the ferjeant might have pardoned, though he had never given the least grounds for it, fince the colonel borrowed it from the knowledge of his own heart. This dictated to him, that he, from a bad motive, was capable of defiring to debauch his friend's wife; and the same heart inspired him to hope that another, from another bad motive, might be guilty of the same breach of friendship, in affisting him. Few men, I believe, think better of others than of themselves; nor do they easily allow the existence of any virtue, of which they perceive no traces in their own minds; for which reason I have observed, that it is extremely disficult to persuade a rogue that you are an honest man; nor would you ever fucceed in the attempt by the strongest evidence, was it not for the comfortable conclusion which the rogue draws, that he who proves himself to be honest, proves himself to be a fool at the same time.

CHAP. IX.

A curious Chapter, from which a curious Reader may draw fundry Observations.

THE ferjeant retired from the colonel in a very dejected state of mind: in which, however, we must leave him a while, and return to Amelia; who, as soon as she was up, had dispatched Mrs. Atkinson to pay off her former lodgings, and to bring off all her cloaths and other moveables.

The trufty messenger returned without performing her errand; for Mrs. Ellison had locked up all her rooms, and was gone out very early that morning, and the servant knew not whither she was gone.

The two ladies now fat down to breakfast, together with Amelia's two children; after which, Amelia declared she would take a coach and visit her husband. To this motion Mrs. Atkinson soon agreed, and offered to be her companion. To say truth, I think it was reasonable enough; and the great abhorrence which Booth

Booth had of feeing his wife in a bailiff's house, was,

perhaps, rather too nice and delicate.

When the ladies were both dreffed, and just going to fend for their vehicle, a great knocking was heard at the door, and prefently Mrs. James was ushered into the room.

This visit was disagreeable enough to Amelia, as it detained her from the fight of her husband, for which she so eagerly longed. However, as she had no doubt but that the visit would be reasonably short, she resolved to receive the lady with all the complaisance in her

power.

Mrs. James now behaved herself so very unlike the person that she lately appeared, that it might have surprized any one who doth not know, that besides that of a fine lady which is all mere art and mummery, every such woman hath some real character at the bottom, in which, whenever nature gets the better of her, she acts. Thus the finest ladies in the world will sometimes love, and sometimes scratch, according to their different natural dispositions, with great fury and violence, though both of these are equally inconsistent with a fine lady's artificial character.

Mrs. James, then, was at the bottom a very goodnatured woman; and the moment she heard of Amelia's misfortune, was sincerely grieved at it. She had acquiesced, on the very first motion, with the colonel's design of inviting her to her house; and this morning at breakfast, when he had acquainted her that Amelia made some difficulty in accepting the offer, very readily undertook to go herself, and persuade her friend to accept the invitation.

She now preffed this matter with such earnestness, that Amelia, who was not extremely versed in the art of denying, was hardly able to resuse her importunity; nothing, indeed, but her affection to Mrs. Atkinson, could have prevailed on her to resuse: that point, however; she would not give up; and Mrs. James, at last, was contented with a promise, that as soon as their af-

fairs

fairs were fettled, Amelia, with her husband and frmily, would make her a visit, and stay some with time her in the country, whither she was soon to retire.

Having obtained this promife, Mrs. James, after many very friendly promifes, took her leave; and stepping into her coach, re-assumed the fine lady, and

drove away to join her company at an auction.

The moment she was gone, Mrs. Atkinson, who had left the room upon the approach of Mrs. James, returned into it, and was informed by Amelia of all that had past.

'Pray, Madam,' faid Mrs. Atkinson, 'do this colonel and his lady live, as it is called, well to-

gether?

'If you mean to ask,' cries Amelia, 'whether they are a very fond couple, I must answer that I believe

6 they are not.'

'I have been told,' fays Mrs. Atkinfon, 'that there' have been instances of women who have become bawds to their own husbands, and the husbands pimps for 'them.'

' Fie upon it,' cries Amelia; 'I hope there are no fuch people. Indeed, my dear, this is being a little

4 too censorious.'

'Call it what you please,' answered Mrs. Atkinfon; 'it arises from my love to you, and my sears for 'your danger. You know the proverb of a burnt 'child; and if such a one hath any good-nature, it 'will dread the fire on the account of others, as well as 'on it's own. And if I may speak my sentiments freely, I cannot think you will be in safety at this 'colonel's house.'

'I cannot but believe your apprehensions to be sincere,' replied Amelia, 'and I must think myself obliged to you for them; but I am convinced you are entirely in an error. I look on Colonel James as the most generous and best of men. He was a friend, and an excellent friend too, to my husband, long before I was acquainted with him, and he hath done

4 him

him a thousand good offices. What do you say of his

behaviour yesterday?"

' I wish,' cries Mrs. Atkinson, ' that his behaviour to-day had been equal. What I am now going to undertake, is the most disagreeable office of friendship,

but it is a necessary one. I must tell you, therefore,

what paffed this morning between the colonel and Mr.

Atkinion; for though it will hurt you, you ought, on many accounts, to know it.' Here the related the whole which we have recorded in the preceding chapter, and with which the ferjeant had acquainted her while Mrs. James was paying her vifit to Amelia; and as the ferjeant had painted the matter rather in ftronger colours than the colonel, fo Mrs. Atkinfon again a little improved on the ferjeant. Neither of thefe good people, perhaps, intended to aggravate any circumstance; but such is, I believe, the unavoidable confequence of all reports. Mrs. Atkinson, indeed, may be supposed not to see what related to James, in the most favourable light, as the serjeant, with more hone ty than prudence, had fuggefted to his wife, that the colonel had not the kindest opinion of her, and had called her a fly and demure---- It is true, he omitted ill-looking b---; two words, which are, perhaps, superior to the patience of any Job in petticoats that ever lived. He made amends, however, by fubstituting some other phrases in their stead, not extremely agreeable to a female ear.

It appeared to Amelia, from Mrs. Atkinson's relation, that the colonel had groffly abused Booth to the ferjeant, and had absolutely refused to become his bail. Poor Amelia became a pale and motionless statue at this account. At length she cried, 'if this be true, I and mine are all, indeed, undone. We have no comfort,

ono hope, no friend left! I cannot disbelieve you. I know you would not deceive me. Why should you,

' indeed, deceive me? But what can have caused-this alteration fince last night? Did I fay or do any thing

to offend him?

You said and did, rather, I believe, a great deal too much to please him, answered Mrs. Atkinson. Besides, he is not in the least offended with you; on

" the contrary, he faid many kind things."

What can my poor love have done? faid Amelia:
He hath not feen the colonel fince last night? Some villain hath set him against my husband; he was once before suspicious of such a person. Some cruel mon-

fter hath belyed his innocence.'

Pardon me, dear Madam,' faid Mrs. Atkinfon, I believe the person who hath injured the captain with this friend of his, is one of the worthiest and best of creatures. Nay, do not be surprized, the person I mean is even your fair self: sure you would not be so dull in any other case; but in this, gratitude, humility, modesty, every virtue, shut your eyes.

· Mortales habetant vifus,

as Virgil fays. What in the world can be more confiftent, than his defire to have you at his own house, and to keep your husband confined in another? All that he said, and all that he did yesterday; and, what is more convincing to me than both, all that he looked last night, are very consistent with both these de-

figns.

13

r.

,

d

d

n

n

e

e

t

1

1

Go heavens!' cries Amelia, 'you chill my blood with horror! the idea freezes me to death: I cannot, i must not, will not think of it. Nothing but conviction—Heaven forbid I should ever have more conviction! And did he abuse my husband! What, did he abuse a poor, unhappy, distressed creature; oppressed, ruined, torn from his children, torn away from his wretched wife; the honestest, worthiest, noblest, tenderest, fondest, best—' Here she burst into an agony of grief which exceeds the power of description.

In this fituation Mrs. Atkinfon was doing her utmost to support her, when a most violent knocking was heard at the door; and immediately the ferjeant ran haftily into the room, bringing with him a cordial which prefently relieved Amelia. What this cordial was, we shall inform the reader in due time. In the mean while he must suspend his curiosity; and the gentlemen at White's may lay wagers, whether it was Ward's pill, or Dr. James's powder.

But before we close this chapter, and return back to the bailiff's house, we must do our best to rescue the character of our heroine from the dulness of apprehension which several of our quick-sighted readers may lay more heavily to her charge than was done by her friend

Mrs. Atkinfon.

I must inform, therefore, all such readers, that it is not because innocence is more blind than guilt, that the former often overlooks and tumbles into the pit, which the latter foresees and avoids. The truth is, that it is almost impossible guilt should miss the discovering of all the fnares in it's way; as it is constantly prying closely into every corner, in order to lay snares for others. Whereas innocence, having no fuch purpofe, walks fearlefsly and carelefsly through life, and is confequently liable to tread on the gins which cunning has laid to entrap it. To speak plainly, and without allegory or figure, it is not want of fense, but want of suspicion, by which innocence is often betrayed. Again, we often admire at the folly of the dupe, when we should transfer our whole surprize to the astonishing guilt of the betrayer. In a word, many an innocent person hath owed his ruin to this circumstance alone, that the degree of villainy was fuch as must have exceeded the faith of every man who was not himfelf a villain.

CHAP. X.

In which are many projound Secrets of Philosophy.

BOOTH having had enough of the author's company the preceding day, choic now another companion. Indeed, the author was not very folicitous of a second interview; for as he could have no hope from Booth's pocket, so he was not likely to receive much increase to his vanity from Booth's conversation: for, low as this wretch

wretch was in virtue, fense, learning, birth, and fortune, he was by no means low in his vanity. This passion, indeed, was so high in him, and at the same time so blinded him to his own demerits, that he hated every man who did not either flatter him, or give him money. In short, he claimed a strange kind of right; either to cheat all his acquaintance of their praise, or to pick their pockets of their pence; in which latter case he himself repaid very liberally with panegyric.

A very little specimen of such a fellow must have fatissied a man of Mr. Booth's temper. He chose, therefore, now to associate himself with that gentleman of whom Bondum had given so shabby a character. In short, Mr. Booth's opinion of the bailist was such, that he recommended a man most, where he least intended it. Nay, the bailist, in the present instance, though he had drawn a malicious conclusion, honestly avowed, that this was drawn only from the poverty of the perfon, which is never, I believe, any forcible disrecommendation to a good mind; but he must have had a very bad mind, indeed, who, in Mr. Booth's circumstances, could have disliked or despited another man because that other man was poor.

Some previous conversation having past between the gentleman and Booth, in which they had both opened their several situations to each other; the former casting an affectionate look on the latter, expressed great compassion for his circumstances; for which Booth thanking him, said, 'You must have a great deal of compassion, and be a very good man, in such a terrible situation as you describe yourself, to have any

· pity to spare for other people.'

'My affairs, Sir,' answered the gentleman, 'are' very bad, it is true; and yet there is one circumstance which makes you appear to me more the object of pity than I am to myself; and it is this: that you must from your years be a novice in affliction; whereas I have served a long apprenticeship to misery, and ought, by this time, to be a pretty good master of Vol. II. 40.

my trade. To fay the truth, I believe, habit teaches men to bear the burdens of the mind, as it inures

them to bear heavy burdens on their shoulders.

Without use and experience, the strongest minds and
 bodies both will stagger under a weight which habit

might render easy, and even contemptible.'

'There is great justice,' cries Booth, 'in the comparison; and, I think, I have myself experienced the truth of it; for I am not that Tyro in affliction,

which you feem to apprehend me. And, perhaps,

it is from the very habit you mention, that I am able to support my present misfortunes a little like a

" man.

The gentleman finiled at this, and cried, 'Indeed,

captain, you are a young philosopher.'

'I think,' cries Booth, 'I have fome pretenfions' to that philosophy which is taught by misfortunes; and you feem to be of opinion, Sir, that is one of the

· best schools of philosophy.'

I mean no more, Sir,' faid the gentleman, 'than that in the days of our affliction we are inclined to think more feriously than in those seasons of life when we are engaged in the hurrying pursuits of business or pleasure, when we have neither leifure nor inclination

to fift and examine things to the bottom. Now there are two confiderations, which from my having

long fixed my thoughts upon them, have greatly supported me under all my afflictions. The one is the

brevity of life, even at it's longest duration, which
 the wifest of men hath compared to the short dimen-

fion of a span. One of the Roman poets compares it to the duration of a race; and another, to the much

fhorter transition of a wave.'

'The second consideration is, the uncertainty of it. Short as it's utmost limits are, it is far from being assured of reaching those limits. The next day, the next hour, the next moment, may be the end of our course. Now, of what value is so uncertain, so pre-

ever

ever lightly it is passed over in our conception, doth in a great measure level all fortunes and conditions, and gives no man a right to triumph in the happiest fate, or any reason to repine in the most miserable. Would the most worldly men see this in the light in which they examine all other matters, they would foon feel and acknowledge the force of this way of reasoning; for which of them would give any price for an estate, from which they were liable to be immediately ejected? or, would they not laugh at him as a madman, who accounted himself rich from such an uncertain possession? This is the fountain, Sir, from Hence it is that which I have drawn my philosophy. I have learnt to look on all those things which are esteemed the bleffings of life, and those which are dreaded as it's evils, with fuch a degree of indifference, that as I should not be elated with possessing the former, to neither am I greatly dejected and depressed by fuffering the latter. Is the actor effeemed happier, to whose lot it falls to play the principal part, than he who plays the lowest? and yet the drama may run twenty nights together, and by confequence may out-' last our lives: but, at the best, life is only a little longer drama; and the business of the great stage is confequently a little more ferious than that which is e performed at the theatre-royal. But even here, the catastrophes and calamities which are represented are capable of affecting us. The wifest men can deceive themselves into feeling the distresses of a tragedy, though they know them to be merely imaginary; and the children will often lament them as realities: what wonder, then, if these tragical scenes, which I allow to be a little more ferious, should a little more affect us? Where then is the remedy, but in the philosophy I have mentioned? which, when once by a long course of meditation it is reduced to a habit, feaches us to fet a just value on every thing; and cures at once all eager wishes and abject fears, all violent " jey

igoy and grief concerning objects which cannot endure

long, and may not exist a moment.'

You have expressed yourself extremely well, cries Booth, ' and I entirely agree with the justice of your fentiments; but, however true all this may be in theory, I still doubt it's efficacy in practice. And the cause of the difference between these two is this; that we reason from our heads, but act from our hearts:

· ---- Video meliora, proboque:

· Deteriora sequor. Nothing can differ more widely than wife men and · fools in their estimation of things; but as both act from their uppermost passion, they both often act alike. What comfort, then, can your philosophy give to an avaricious man who is deprived of his

riches; or to an ambitious man who is stripped of his power? to the fond lover who is torn from his mistress; or to the tender husband who is dragged

from his wife? Do you really think, that any meditations on the fhortness of life will soothe them in

their afflictions? Is not this very shortness itself one of

their afflictions? And if the evil they fuffer be a temporary deprivation of what they love, will they

onot think their fate the harder, and lament the more, that they are to lose any part of an enjoyment to which

• there is fo short and fo uncertain a period?'

· I beg leave, Sir,' faid the gentleman, ' to diftinguish here. By philosophy, I do not mean the bare knowledge of right and wrong; but an energy, a

habit, as Aristotle calls it; and this I do firmly be-· lieve, with him and with the Stoicks, is superior to

all the attacks of fortune.'

He was proceeding, when the bailiff came in, and in a furly tone bade them both good-morrow; after which, he asked the philosopher, if he was prepared to go to Newgate; for that he must carry him thither that afternoon.

The poor man feemed very much shocked with this news.

news, 'I hope,' cries he, 'you will give a little longer 'time, if not till the return of the writ. But I beg 'you particularly, not to carry me thither to-day; for I expect my wife and children here in the evening.'

I have nothing to do with wives and children,' cried the bailiff; I never defire to fee any wives and

children here. I like no fuch company.'

'I intreat you, faid the prisoner, give me another day. I shall take it as a great obligation; and you will disappoint me in the cruellest manner in the

world, if you refuse me.'

' I can't help people's disappointments,' cries the bailiff; 'I must consider myself and my own family. I know not where I shall be paid the money that's due already. I can't afford to keep prisoners at my own

expence.'

'I don't intend it shall be at your expence,' cries the philosopher; 'my wife is gone to raise money this 'morning, and I hope to pay you all I owe you at her arrival. But we intend to sup together to-night at your house; and if you should remove me now, it 'would be the most barbarous disappointment to us 'both, and will make me the most miserable man alive.'

'Nay, for my part,' faid the bailiff, 'I don't defire'
to do any thing barbarous. I know how to treat
gentlemen with civility as well as another; and when
people pay as they go, and fpend their money like
gentlemen, I am fure no body can accuse me of any
incivility fince I have been in the office. And if you
intend to be merry to-night, I am not the man that
will prevent it: though I say it, you may have as
good a supper dressed here as at any tavern in town.'

'Since Mr. Bondum is so kind, Captain,' said the philosopher, 'I hope for the favour of your company.' I affure you, if it ever be my fortune to go abroad into the world, I shall be proud of the honour of your

· acquaintance'

'Indeed, Sir,' cries Booth, 'it is an honour I shall be very ready to accept; but as for this evening, I

cannot help faying, I hope to be engaged in another · place.'

"I promise you, Sir," answered the other, "I shall rejoice at your liberty, though I am a lofer by it.'

Why, as to that matter,' cries Bondum with a fneer, I fancy, captain, you may engage yourfelf to the gentleman without any fear of breaking your word; for I am very much mistaken if we part to-

day.

' Pardon me, my good friend,' faid Booth, 'but I

expect my bail every minute.'

- ' Look'e, Sir,' cries Bondum, 'I don't love to fee gentlemen in an error. I shall not take the serjeant's bail; and as for the colonel, I have been with him
- myself this morning (for to be sure I love to do all I
- can for gentlemen;) and he told me, he could not oposibly be here to day: besides, why should I mince

" the matter; there is more stuff in the office." What do you mean by ftuff?' cries Booth.

I mean, that there is another writ,' answered the bailiff, 'at the fuit of Mrs. Ellison, the gentlewoman that was here yesterday; and the attorney that was

with her is concerned against you. Some officers

would not tell you all this: but I loves to shew civi-Iity to gentlemen, while they behave themselves as

fuch. And I loves the gentlemen of the army in par-

ticular. I had like to have been in the army myfelf

once; but I liked the commission I have better. · Come, captain, let not your noble courage be cast

down; what fay you to a glass of white wine, or a ' tiff of punch, by way of whet?'

' I have told you, Sir, I never drink in the morning,'

cries Booth a little peevishly.

' No offence, I hope, Sir,' faid the bailiff. 'I hope I have not treated you with any incivility. I don't

ask any gentleman to call for liquor in my house, if he doth not chuse it; nor I don't desire any body to

fray here longer than they have a mind to. Newgate; to be fure, is the place for all debtors that can't find

6 bail.

bail. I knows what civility is, and I fcorn to behave myfelf unbecoming a gentleman; but I'd have you confider that the twenty-four hours appointed by act of parliament are almost out; and so it is time to think of removing. As to bail, I would not have you flatter yourfelf; for I knows very well there are other things coming against you. Besides, the sum you are already charged with is very large, and I must see you in a place of safety. My house is no prison, though I lock up for a little time in it. Indeed, when gentlemen are gentlemen, and likely to find bail, I don't stand for a day or two; but I have a good nose at a bit of carrion, captain; I have not carried so much carrion to Newgate, without knowing the smell of it.'

'I understand not your cant,' cries Booth; 'but I did not think to have offended you so much by refusing

f to drink in a morning.'

'Offend me, Sir!' cries the bailiff. 'Who told you so? Do you think, Sir, if I want a glass of wine, I am under any necessity of asking my prisoner for it? Damn it, Sir, I'll shew you I scorn your words; I can afford to treat you with a glass of the best wine in England, if you come to that.' He then pulled out a handful of guineas, saying, 'There, Sir, they are all my own; I owe nobody a shilling. I am no beggar, nor no debtor. I am the king's officer, as well as you, and I will spend guinea for guinea as long as you please.'

'Hark'e, rascal,' cries Booth, laying hold of the bailiff's collar, how dare you treat me with this infolence? Doth the law give you any authority to infult me in my missfortunes?' At which words he gave the bailiff a good shove, and threw him from

him.

Very well, Sir,' cries the bailiff, 'I will fwear beth an affault and an attempt to a refcue. If officers are to be used in this manner, there is an end of all law and justice. But though I am not a match for

' you myfelf, I have those below that are.' He then ran to the door, and called up two ill-looking-fellows, his followers, whom, as foon as they entered the room, he ordered to feize on Booth, declaring he would immediately carry him to Newgate; at the same time pouring out a vast quantity of abuse, below the dignity of hiltory to record.

Booth defired the two dirty fellows to stand off, and declared he would make no refistance, at the same time

bidding the bailiff carry him wherever he durft,

'I'll fhew you what I dare,' cries the bailiff; and again ordered the followers to lay hold of their prisoner, faying, 'He has affaulted me already, and endeavoured ' a rescue. I shan't trust such a fellow to walk at 'liberty. A gentleman, indeed! Aye, aye, New-

gate is the properest place for such gentry: as arrant

carrion as ever was carried thither?

The fellows then both laid violent hands on Booth, and the bailiff stepped to the door to order a coach; when on a fudden the whole scene was changed in an instant: for now the serjeant came running, out of breath, into the room; and feeing his friend, the captain, roughly handled by two ill-looking fellows, without asking any questions, stepped briskly up to his asfistance, and instantly gave one of the assailants so violent a salute with his fist, that he directly measured his length on the floor.

Booth having by this means his right arm at liberty, was unwilling to be idle, or entirely to owe his refcue from both the rushians to the serjeant; he therefore imitated the example which his friend had fet him, and with a lufty blow levelled the other follower with his

companion on the ground.

The bailiff roared out, 'A rescue, a rescue!' to which the ferjeant answered, there was no rescue intended. 'The captain,' faid he, 'wants no rescue. · Here are some friends coming who will deliver him in

a better manner.

The bailiff fwore heartily he would carry him to Newgate, in fpite of all the friends in the world.

'You carry him to Newgate!' cried the serjeant, with the highest indignation; 'offer but to lay your hands on him, and I will knock your teeth down your ugly jaws.' Then turning to Booth, he cried, They will be all here within a minute, Sir; we had much ado to keep my lady from coming herself; but she is at home in good health, longing to see your honour; and I hope you will be with her within this half hour.'

And now three gentlemen entered the room; these were an attorney, the person whom the serjeant had procured in the morning to be his bail with Colonel James,

and laftly, Dr. Harrison himself.

The bailiff no fooner faw the attorney, with whom he was well acquainted, (for the others he knew not) than he began as the phrase is, to pull in his horns, and ordered the two followers, who were now got again on their legs, to walk down stairs.

So, captain! fays the doctor; when we last parted,
 I believe we neither of us expected to meet in such a

· place as this.'

' Indeed, doctor,' cries Booth, ' I did not expect to have been fent hither by the gentleman who did me that favour.'

'How so, Sir?' said the dostor; 'you was sent hither by some person, I suppose, to whom you was indebted. This is the usual place, I apprehend, for

creditors to fend their debtors to. But you ought to be more furprized, that the gentleman who fent you

hither is come to release you. Mr. Murphy, you

will perform all the necessary ceremonials.'

The attorney then asked the bailiff with how many actions Booth was charged, and was informed there were five besides the doctor's, which was much the heaviest of all. Proper bonds were presently provided, and the doctor and the serjeant's friend signed them;

the

the bailiff, at the instance of the attorney, making no

objection to the bail.

Booth, we may be affured, made a handsome speech to the doctor for such extraordinary friendship, with which, however, we do not think proper to trouble the reader: and now every thing being ended, and the company ready to depart, the bailiff stepped up to Booth, and told him he hoped he would remember civility money.

'I believe,' cries Booth, 'you mean, incivility money; if there be any fees due for rudeness, I must own

you have a very just claim.'

' I am fure, Sir,' cries the bailiff, ' I have treated ' your honour with all the respect in the world: no ' man, I am sure, can charge me with using a gentle-

man rudely; I knows what belongs to a gentleman better: but you can't deny that two of my men have been knocked down; and I doubt not but, as you are

a gentleman, you will give them fomething to drink.'
Booth was about to answer with some passion, when
the attorney interfered, and whispered in his ear, that
it was usual to make a compliment to the officer, and

that he had better comply with the custom.

'If the fellow had treated me civilly,' answered Booth, 'I should have had no objection to comply with 'a bad custom in his favour; but I am resolved, I will 'never reward a man for using me ill, and I will not 'agree to give him a single farthing.'

'Tis very well, Sir,' faid the bailiff; 'I am rightly ferved for my good nature; but if it had been to do

again, I would have taken care you should not have

been bailed this day.'

Dr. Harrison, to whom Booth referred the cause, after giving him a succinct account of what had passed, declared the captain to be in the right. He said it was a most horrid imposition, that such fellows were ever suffered to prey on the necessitous: but that the example would be much worse to reward them where they had behaved themselves ill. 'And I think,' says he, the

the bailiff is worthy of great rebuke for what he hath s just now faid; in which, I hope, he hath boasted of

more power than is in him. We do indeed, with ' great justice and propriety, value ourselves on our

· freedom, if the liberty of the subject depends on the

· pleasure of such fellows as these!'

' It is not so, neither, altogether,' cries the lawyer; but custom hath established a present or fee to them at the delivery of a prisoner, which they call civility ' money, and expect as in a manner their due, though

' in reality they have no right.'

' But will any man,' cries Dr. Harrison, 'after what the captain hath told us, fay that the bailiff hath behaved himself as he ought; and if he had, is he to be rewarded for acting in an unchristian and in-'human manner? It is pity, that instead of a custom of feeing them out of the pockets of the poor and wretched, when they do not behave themselves ill, there was not both a law and a practice to punish them severely when they do. In the present case, I am fo far from agreeing to give the bailiff a shilling, that, if there be any method of pimishing him for his rudeness, I shall be heartily glad to see it put into execution: for there are none whose conduct should be · so strictly watched, as that of these necessary evils in · the fociety, as their office concerns, for the most part, thole poor creatures who cannot do themselves justice, and as they are generally the worlt of men who under-" take it."

The bailiff then quitted the room, muttering that he should know better what to do another time; and shortly after Booth and his friends left the house; but as they were going out, the author took Dr. Harrison alide, and flipped a receipt into his hand, which the doctor returned, faying, he never subscribed when he neither knew the work nor the author; but that if he would call at his lodgings, he would be very willing to give all the encouragement to merit which was in his power.

The author took down the doctor's name and direction, and made him as many bows as he would have done, had he carried off the half guinea for which he had been fishing.

Mr. Booth then took leave of the philosopher, and departed with the rest of his friends.

OF THE SECOND VOLUM

